



*“...for the work of the ministry, for  
the edifying of the body of Christ.”*

## **Book Three - A**

*English Edition*

**by David L. Dawson**

**ETS Ministries • 4400 Moulton Street • Suite D • Greenville, TX 75401  
(903) 455-3782 • FAX (903) 454-8524**



# **EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

## **Book Three-A Disciple Lesson Plan**

<b>Book</b>	<b>Topic</b>	<b>Memory</b>	<b>Bible Study • and Ministry *</b>	<b>Outside Reading and Other Assignments</b>
3/1	<b>Definition of Discipleship</b>	Romans 8:32 Philippians 4:19	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Purity of Life</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 1</li> <li>• Write Objectives</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/2	<b>A Principle of Discipleship</b>	Hebrews 2:18 Psalm 119:9,11	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Integrity in Living</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Follow-Up Guide</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 2</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/3	<b>Leading Bible Discussion I</b>	Matthew 6:33 Luke 9:23	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Char. in Action</li> <li>* Share Bridge</li> <li>* Evangelism Report</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 3</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/4	<b>Leading Bible Discussion II</b>	1 John 2:15,16 Romans 12:2	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Who is God?</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 4</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/5	<b>Leading Bible Discussion III</b>	1 Corinthians 15:58 Hebrews 12:3	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Authority of Word</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for a Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 5</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> <li>• Write Questions</li> </ul>
3/6	<b>Leading Bible Discussion IV</b>	Mark 10:45 2 Corinthians 4:5	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• The Holy Spirit</li> <li>* Share Bridge</li> <li>* Evangelism Report</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 6</li> <li>• Discussion Questions</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/7	<b>The Focal Point of Discipleship</b>	Proverbs 3:9,10 2 Corinthians 9:6,7	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Spiritual Warfare</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 7</li> <li>• Discussion Questions</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
3/8	<b>Commitment to Discipleship</b>	Acts 1:8 John 20:21	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Return of Christ</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 8</li> <li>• Discussion Questions</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>



# **EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

## **Book Three-B Disciple Lesson Plan**

<b>Book</b>	<b>Topic</b>	<b>Memory</b>	<b>Bible Study • and Ministry *</b>	<b>Outside Reading and Other Assignments</b>
<b>3/9</b>	<b>Pacesetting</b>	John 13:34,35 1 John 3:18	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What is a Disciple?</li> <li>* Share Bridge</li> <li>* Evangelism Report</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 9</li> <li>• Discussion Questions</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/10</b>	<b>Selecting People For Discipling</b>	Philippians 2:3,4 1 Peter 5:5,6	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• The Responsible Steward</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 10</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/11</b>	<b>Team and Teamwork</b>	Ephesians 5:3 1 Peter 2:11	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Helping Others Find Christ</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 11</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/12</b>	<b>Finding the Will of God</b>	Leviticus 19:11 Acts 24,16	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Follow-Up</li> <li>* Share Bridge</li> <li>* Evangelism Report</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• DAMNB Ch. 12</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/13</b>	<b>Spiritual Reproduction</b>	Hebrews 11:6 Romans 4:20,21	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• World Vision</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• How to Know the Will of God</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/14</b>	<b>Interpersonal Relationships</b>	Galatians 6:9,10 Matthew 5:16	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Intro. to Thess.</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Pray for Disciple</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Acceptance</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>
<b>3/15</b>	<b>Introduction to Leadership</b>	on your own (oyo)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• 1 Thessalonians 1</li> <li>* Share Bridge</li> <li>* Evangelism Report</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Follow-Up Guide</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Marks of a Disciple</li> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> <li>* Evaluation of Objectives</li> </ul>
<b>3/16</b>	<b>Biblical Leadership</b>	oyo	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• 1 Thessalonians 2</li> <li>* Pray for a Convert</li> <li>* Meet with Disciple</li> <li>* Follow-Up Guide</li> <li>* Hand in Objectives</li> <li>* Discipling Plan</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• 5 PSMA</li> <li>• Bible Reading Chart</li> </ul>

[illegible]

[illegible]



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

## **Ministry Outreach Plan**

The next three pages are the most important pages in the *Equipping The Saints* course for several reasons. They:

- make the *Equipping The Saints* course an on-the-job training program,
- make the *Equipping The Saints* course training practical and not just cognitive, and
- make the disciple reproduce in others what is being taught.

The end product or objective of *Equipping The Saints* is to make you a reproducing disciple. From the onset of your training you must start praying for two people to win to Christ. This engages you in evangelism—fishing for people. You also begin praying for one person to disciple. This causes you to reach back into the church for people who are not growing the way they should in their walk with God.

### **Ministry Prayer Guide**

On the next page you will find the Ministry Prayer Guide. This will help you identify potential people for your ministry.

### **Non-Christian Friends**

Make a list of all your non-Christian friends and begin to pray for them. When you have peace from God about a name, move the person to the evangelism section of your Ministry Discipleship Guide and place the name on your Ministry Prayer Guide in the space marked “Convert.”

### **Christian Friends**

Make a list of Christian friends who do not seem to be growing in their walk with God. When you have a commitment from a person to go through *Equipping The Saints* with you, write the name in the Disciple-Making section of your Ministry Discipleship Guide and on your Ministry Prayer Tree on the line marked “Disciple.”

### **Ministry Prayer Tree**

The Ministry Prayer Tree helps you visualize God’s plan for your ministry. Write your name in the box on the left side of the page. The three you win and disciple must be trained to reproduce the next generation. Set your heart now to labor until at least this page is filled with your spiritual children. What a wonderful gift of obedience this would be to present to your Savior at the Judgment Seat of Christ!

### **Ministry Discipleship Guide**

This guide will direct you in what to do with your converts and disciples until we get to this subject matter later in your training.

### **Evangelism**

The four-point outline will guide you in what to do with the people whom you have won.

### **Discipleship**

The nine-point outline will guide you in what to do with your new convert or disciple as you help the person grow toward discipleship.



*Make a list of your non-Christian friends and begin to pray for them. When you feel peace about two of them, enter their names on your Ministry Discipleship Guide (back page).*

[illegible][illegible]



The diagram illustrates a workflow for evangelism. It begins with a box labeled "Your Name". This box branches into two main paths: "Convert" and "Disciple". Each path leads to three separate boxes for notes or details.

```

graph LR
    A[Your Name] --> B[Convert]
    A --> C[Disciple]
    B --> D1[ ]
    B --> D2[ ]
    B --> D3[ ]
    C --> E1[ ]
    C --> E2[ ]
    C --> E3[ ]

```

**Your Name**

**Convert**

**Disciple**

*"And the things you have heard from me among many witnesses, commit these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also."*  
*(2 Timothy 2:2)*

(2 Timothy 2:2)





# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

## Ministry Discipleship Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

### Evangelism

*As part of your Equipping The Saints training, you are to ask God for two persons to win to Christ. List the two persons below, once you have peace from God who those persons should be.*

Name _____	✓	Date	Name _____	✓	Date
Prayed For			Prayed For		
Shared Testimony			Shared Testimony		
Presented Bridge			Presented Bridge		
Decision			Decision		

### Disciple Making

*You are also to ask God to give you one person to disciple. This person may be a Christian friend who is not growing, and for whom you are praying, or it could be one of the above converts.*

Name _____	✓	Date	Comment
Received Christ			
Baptized			
Attends Church Regularly			
Consistent Quiet Time			
Five Assurance Bible Studies 1/4-1/8			
Memorized Five Assurance Verses 1/4-1/8			
Memorizes and Shares the Bridge			
Develops A Servant Heart			
Committed to Growing — Finished ETS Book One			



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4





## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Prior-ity	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



*“...for the work of the ministry, for  
the edifying of the body of Christ.”*

## **Book Three - A**

*English Edition*

**by David L. Dawson**

**ETS Ministries • 4400 Moulton Street • Suite D • Greenville, TX 75401  
(903) 455-3782 • FAX (903) 454-8524**

**IF FOUND, PLEASE RETURN TO:**

NAME: \_\_\_\_\_

ADDRESS: \_\_\_\_\_

CITY: \_\_\_\_\_ STATE: \_\_\_\_\_ ZIP: \_\_\_\_\_

PHONE: (HOME) \_\_\_\_\_ (WORK) \_\_\_\_\_

*Equipping The Saints, Book Three-A  
Copyright © 1982 ETS Ministries  
Greenville, Texas U.S.A.*

*All Rights Reserved, including translation.*

*ETS Ministries is an organization devoted to helping churches and mission  
agencies train lay people to do the work of the ministry.*

*Scripture quotations in this publication are from The Holy Bible,  
The New King James Version, Copyright ©1979, 1980, 1982, 1984,  
Thomas Nelson Inc., Publishers.  
Used by permission.*

*English edition printed in the United States of America.*

***Translations currently available:***

*English  
Spanish  
Portuguese  
Korean  
Chinese*

***Translations under development:***

*Indonesian  
Italian  
Russian*

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**1**

Romans 8:32

3/1

He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?

NKJ

His Provision

Philippians 4:19

3/1

And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

NKJ

His Provision

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**2**

Hebrews 2:18

3/2

For in that He Himself has suffered, being tempted, He is able to aid those who are tempted.

NKJ

His Help in Temptation

Psalms 119:9,11

3/2

How can a young man cleanse his way? *By taking heed according to Your word.*

Your word I have hidden in my heart, That I might not sin against You.

NKJ

His Help in Temptation

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**3**

Matthew 6:33

3/3

But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.

NKJ

Put Christ First

Luke 9:23

3/3

Then He said to them all, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me."

NKJ

Put Christ First

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**4**

1 John 2:15,16

3/4

Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world.

NKJ

Separate from the World

Romans 12:2

3/4

And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

NKJ

Separate from the World

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**5**

1 Corinthians 15:58

3/5

Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

NKJ

Be Steadfast

Mark 10:45

3/6

For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.

NKJ

Serve Others

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**6**

Proverbs 3:9,10

3/7

Honor the LORD with your possessions, and with the firstfruits of all your increase; so your barns will be filled with plenty, and your vats will overflow with new wine.

NKJ

Give Generously

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**7**

Acts 1:8

3/8

But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.

NKJ

Develop World Vision

**W  
E  
E  
K**

**8**

Hebrews 12:3

3/5

For consider Him who endured such hostility from sinners against Himself, lest you become weary and discouraged in your souls.

NKJ

Be Steadfast

2 Corinthians 4:5

3/6

For we do not preach ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

NKJ

Serve Others

2 Corinthians 9:6,7

3/7

But this I say: He who sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and he who sows bountifully will also reap bountifully. So let each one give as he purposes in his heart, not grudgingly or of necessity; for God loves a cheerful giver.

NKJ

Give Generously

John 20:21

3/8

Then Jesus said to them again, "Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you."

NKJ

Develop World Vision



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

## Disciple's Application Guide

3/1

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Discipleship  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Definition of Discipleship

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Definition of Discipleship</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete Purity of Life (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 1</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
Pray for a convert		
Pray for your disciple		
Meet with your disciple		
<i>Write Objectives for this term</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Romans 8:32</i>		
<i>Philippians 4:19</i>		
Review all previous verses		



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **DEFINITION OF DISCIPLESHIP**

NOTES

### **Introduction and Definition**

The word DISCIPLE comes from the Greek word “Mathetes” which means LEARNER. It implies a student/teacher relationship and necessitates the disciple’s adopting the philosophy, teaching, and practices of his teacher.

This is what Jesus had in mind when He called men to follow Him. He wanted men to leave their sinful way of living and adopt His new teaching, philosophy, practices, and lifestyle.

The learning progress of the disciples was not evaluated by their retention of information or knowledge taught. Rather it was to be demonstrated in their daily living. They were taught the true meaning of the commandments and how to fulfill them each day by imitating Jesus. Paul said it a little differently but hit at the same idea or issue.

*Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation;  
old things have passed away; behold, all things have  
become new.*

*2 Corinthians 5:17*

### **The World’s Standard for Discipleship**

By the world’s standard, a person is considered a good Christian if he goes to church for an hour every Sunday, tries to live a good life, and is kind to others. Some Christians tend to create their own standards for discipleship and end up creating God in their own image rather than allowing God to transform them into His likeness. Since the Scriptures are not all that important to them, they fail to realize that God has His own standards for discipleship.

### **Jesus’ Standard for Discipleship**

Jesus was very clear about His standards for discipleship. Certain things were to characterize the life of every follower of Christ. Without these, Jesus said, a man could not be His disciple.

### **Continues in God’s Word**

A disciple is characterized by a continuance in the Word of God. This is clearly seen in John’s Gospel.

*Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, "If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed."  
John 8:31*

## NOTES

In God's standard the Scriptures are of supreme importance since they reveal God and His will for us. If we are to continue in His Word, we must incorporate the various fingers of the Word Hand into our personal lives. Since Satan knows the value of the Word to strengthen us in our battle against him, he is forever trying to see that we have not time to read or study God's Word. Are you winning the battle?

### **Loves Others**

A disciple is characterized by his love for others.

*A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another.  
John 13:34,35*

One of the distinguishing marks of every disciple is the love he has for other people. Jesus was not just talking about loving other Christians; He was talking about *all men*. The tensions that exist between Christians, to say nothing of those that exist between non-Christians, make one wonder how well we are keeping this commandment.

If we are to follow Jesus' standard for discipleship to bring this area under the Lordship of Christ. We need to resolve our differences so we can love people.

### **Bears Much Fruit**

A disciple is fruitful—both in the fruit of the Spirit and in the winning and discipling of others.

*By this My Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.  
John 15:8*

The fruit John is primarily talking about is the people who come to Christ as a result of our witness. Are you asking God to give you men and women to win and disciple so that there will be fruit in your life?

Not only should we be concerned with the fruits of evangelism, but also with the fruits of the Spirit listed for us in Galatians.

*But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.  
Galatians 5:22,23*



The Spirit of God is ever at work trying to make these fruits a reality in our lives. How are you doing with them?

If we were to ask your family—those who know you best—to evaluate you in these attributes, how would they rate you?

## **Puts God First**

A disciple must put God first above all other people—even one's self!

*If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father and mother, wife and children, brothers and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.*

*Luke 14:26*

Here Jesus says that our relationship to Him must come before every other human relationship. To children, it means God must come before their parents. To parents, it means God must come before their children. If we put Him first, the result will not be weaker relationships, but stronger ones.

In some instances it is easy to put God before others. But Jesus says we must not only place Him before others but also above ourselves. This is a somewhat harder task. But if we do not, we cannot be Jesus' disciple.

## **Bears His Cross**

A disciple must not allow any thing or interest to hinder him from obediently following Christ.

*And whoever does not bear his cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple.*

*Luke 14:27*

When Jesus talks about putting God first in our lives, He brings us to a place where there is a cross. On that cross we must put to death our dreams and aspirations and replace them with His will. God can then redirect our lives so that He can live out His will for us in our bodies. For some people this is more of a cross than it is for others. To some it means a radical change, while to others it is only a minor correction. But to each it represents a cross because it means the death of our wills and the doing of His.

Jesus says a person cannot be His disciple unless he is willing to bear that cross. Are you willing?

## **Forsakes the old sinful ways**

A disciple must forsake all the old ways of his life to follow Jesus.

*So likewise, whoever of you does not forsake all that he has cannot be My disciple.*

*Luke 14:33*

## NOTES

In this passage Jesus rules out a double standard for discipleship. He did not say that we must be *willing* to forsake all we have. He did not say that there was going to be a watered-down form of discipleship for all who refuse to pay the price. He said, "...whoever of you does not forsake all that he has cannot be My disciple." Have you forsaken all? Does He count you as his disciple?

## The Cost of Discipleship

Discipleship is a costly venture. It cost Jesus his life to redeem you and make you His disciple. Ten of the remaining apostles were put to death, martyred for their faith in Jesus. Only John escaped a violent death. But even he spent part of his later years exiled on the island of Patmos for his faith.

Discipleship is a costly venture no matter which way you decide. It will cost you your life if you are serious about exchanging your life for the fulfilling of Christ's Great Commission.

But discipleship is even more costly if we choose not to obey Christ and choose the temporal rather than the eternal values. It is only through a life of discipleship that we win for ourselves during the vapor of our life the eternal reward and crown that the New Testament writers tell us to be concerned about. It is only through discipleship that we can find our true self and be totally fulfilled and satisfied.

*Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. For what is a man profited if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?"*

*Matthew 16:24-26*



# **EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

## **BIBLE STUDY:**

## **PURITY OF LIFE**

VERSES Pg. 721

Taking a stand on the moral absolutes of God's word is not popular. But even though many people seek freedom from all moral responsibility, Christians must live by Biblical values.

### **God's Standard**

1. Using a dictionary, define *purity*. \_\_\_\_\_

2. What does God promise those who are pure in heart?

Psalm 24:3-5 \_\_\_\_\_

Matthew 5:8 \_\_\_\_\_

3. What are God's standards for our behavior?

Matthew 5:27,28 \_\_\_\_\_

2 Corinthians 7:1 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 4:3-8 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Peter 3:3,4 \_\_\_\_\_

4. How does God describe those who practice impurity?

Ephesians 4:18,19 \_\_\_\_\_

### **The Importance of Personal Purity**

5. From 1 Corinthians 6:13-20, list several reasons why we should avoid immorality.

Verse 13 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 15 \_\_\_\_\_

Verses 16,17 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 18 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 19 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 20 \_\_\_\_\_

6. From Ephesians 5:3-5, in which specific areas of our lives is purity important? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

7. The world’s standards differ greatly from God’s. From 1 John 2:15,16 what are foundations for the world’s standards? List and define these.

Foundation	Definition

8. What does Scripture say to the following excuses for wrong moral behavior?

a. “Since everyone does it, it must be all right.” Proverbs 14:12 \_\_\_\_\_

b. “I only need to discover if this is right for me.” Ecclesiastes 11:9 \_\_\_\_\_

c. “As long as I don’t hurt anybody, it’s okay.” Leviticus 5:17 \_\_\_\_\_

d. “Nobody will ever find out that I did it.” Hebrews 4:13 \_\_\_\_\_

e. “I’ll stop after this one time.” Galatians 6:7,8 \_\_\_\_\_

f. “I didn’t really do anything—all I did was think it.” Matthew 5:28 \_\_\_\_\_

**The Path to Purity**

9. What are the steps from temptation to sin? James 1:14,15 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

10. Read Genesis 3:6,8 and Joshua 7:21. How do these two passages compare? List the similarities.

Questions	Genesis 3:6,8	Joshua 7:21
■ What physical sense was stimulated?		
■ What feeling resulted from the stimulation?		
■ What act finally resulted from it?		
■ What was done with the evidence?		

Do you think every act of sin follows this pattern? Why or why not? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

11. What three important principles for living a life of purity are mentioned by Paul in his letter to Timothy? 2 Timothy 2:22

\_\_\_\_\_

Try to forget the number 13. When you have forgotten it, check this box ☐ Can you do it? This is how some people try to avoid immorality—they think they can just make themselves not think about it.

It is impossible to eliminate a wrong thought from your mind unless you substitute something good in its place. Paul said that we are to “put off” the old nature and “put on” the new nature (Ephesians 4:22-24). This passage illustrates the principle of substitution. How would you relate Scripture memory and meditation to this principle?

\_\_\_\_\_

12. What can we do to live a clean life pleasing to the Lord?

Psalm 51:10 \_\_\_\_\_

Proverbs 4:14,15 \_\_\_\_\_

Romans 13:14 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Peter 1:22 \_\_\_\_\_

13. Study Genesis 39:7-12 and 2 Samuel 11:1-4. Compare the events in Joseph’s and David’s lives.

Questions	Joseph	David
■ What were the surrounding circumstances?		
■ What were their respective attitudes?		
■ What were their resulting actions?		

Why do you think these two men responded in different ways to a similar situation?

Personal Relationships

Several New Testament passages state the qualities of life of a person who is rightly related to other people. Consider the following:

14. How should you treat the following people? 1 Timothy 5:1,2

Older men

Older women

Younger men

Younger women

Is there any relationship you have with someone that needs to be brought into conformity to these standards? If so, what should you do about it?

15. Read Titus 2:2-8 and record at least three qualities that should appear in the lives of the following four categories of people.

	Older Men	Older Women	Younger Men	Younger Women
①				
②				
③				

a. In which of the above qualities would you like to see progress? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How can you go about doing this? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. What qualities are important to you in someone of the opposite sex? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

d. Do these differ from standards you have had previously? If so, how? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

e. State at least two scriptural standards you have concerning your relationship with the opposite sex.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## Perspective on Marriage

16. Read Genesis 2:18-25

a. Who originated marriage? \_\_\_\_\_

b. For what purpose was marriage instituted? \_\_\_\_\_

c. State the ideas of verse 24 in your own words. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

17. Read 2 Corinthians 6:14,15.

a. What principle does God set forth in this passage? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How does this apply to a Christian marriage? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

c. What do you feel would be some of the resulting problems if this principle were violated in marriage?  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

18. What can you do if you are already married this way? 1 Corinthians 7:12-16 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

19. What possible reasons might there be for not marrying? 1 Corinthians 7:7-9; 25-35 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

20. Read Ephesians 5:21-33—a passage on Christian marriage.

a. What is God's desire for husbands? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. In what ways can a husband fulfill God's desire for Him? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

c. What is God's desire for wives? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

d. In what ways can a wife fulfill God's desire for her? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_



## Remember These Points:

Add a sentence or two to the following statements to summarize the most important things you learned from each section of this chapter.

### God's Standard

God has definite standards for purity of thoughts, speech, and conduct. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

### The Importance of Personal Purity

The Scriptures give clear reasons for maintaining personal purity.

---

---

---

### The Path to Purity

Application of scriptural principles leads to a pure life. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

### Personal Relationships

God wants us to have personal standards in our relationships with others. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

### Perspective on Marriage

The Scriptures reveal God's perspective on purity in marriage. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

---



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **DISCIPLES ARE MADE — NOT BORN**

**by**

**Walter A. Henrichsen**

**FOREWORD BY**

**Howard G. Hendricks**

**Used by Permission of  
Victor Press**

# Foreword

“Make disciples” is the mandate of the Master (Matthew 28:19,20). We may ignore it, but we cannot evade it.

Our risen Christ left this legacy—the magna charta of the church. He provided both the model and the method. His life—and death—recast the lives of men. He demonstrated that you have not done anything until you have changed the lives of men.

“Follow Me,” He urged His men. And then that staggering assurance: “Lo I am with you *always*”...Somehow we have forgotten that this promise is not a *carte blanche*; His promise is linked with a process. We cannot embrace the *promise* and ignore the *process*.

Much of the feverish and frustrating activity of the contemporary church is devoid of relevance and fulfillment. Entertainment, not education, is our program. Laymen are disenchanted. They are looking for an involvement with eternal bite. C. S. Lewis said it: “All that is not eternal is eternally out of date.”

*Disciples Are Made—Not Born* is not a collection of dry, doctrinal dust but an eminently practical and provocative cud to chew on. The writer constantly hits the nail with his head.

Walt Henrichsen is no mere theorist. Long associated with The Navigators—an organization committed to disciple-making—he has probed the Scriptures persistently, and has presented effectively the results of his study and experience.

He also writes out of the reality of family life. He and his wife, Leette, are having the joy of discipling four active children. And they have known the heartache of losing their older son to leukemia.

Here is a primer on discipleship, commended to the one who wants to walk where Christ walked and sustain a ministry of multiplication. These pages fill an urgent need in our generation when the battle is for the minds and hearts of men.

*“Everyone, after he has been fully trained, will be like his teacher,” our Lord avowed.*

*Luke 6:40 NASB*

This book invites you to take *His* yoke upon you and learn of *Him*.

—Howard G. Hendricks  
Professor of Christian Education  
Dallas Theological Seminary

# Chapter 1

## THE KIND OF PERSON GOD USES

When Jesus Christ voluntarily gave his life on the cross some 2,000 years ago, He did not die for a cause. He died for people. During His ministry on earth He “ordained twelve, that they should be with Him, and that He might send them forth to preach” (Mark 3:14). Just before His death on Calvary, Jesus prayed for His men (see John 17). Over forty times in that prayer, He made reference to His twelve disciples.

During His brief ministry on earth, Jesus had the world on His heart, but He saw the world through the eyes of His men. Prior to His Ascension, He gave to these men what is commonly referred to as the Great Commission. As recorded in Matthew 28:19, Jesus charged them to take the Gospel through the world by making disciples.

Jesus had world vision. He expected His men to have world vision. Jesus expected them to see the world through the disciples that they would produce, just as He had seen the world through the 12 men He had raised up. His vision of reaching the world through the use of multiplying disciples is not found in an obscure passage in the Bible—it is a theme that pulsates from page to page.

It was obviously the thing that was on the Apostle Paul’s heart as he wrote his “Last Will and Testament” to his son in the faith, Timothy. Let’s briefly analyze 2 Timothy 2:2: “And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.”

“Thou” includes the importance of the individual. At Jesus’ meeting with Peter, He said, according to John 1:42, “Thou art Simon... thou shalt be called Cephas.” (You are Simon, you will become a rock.) When Jesus saw Peter, He did not see him as he was but as he would someday be. There is tremendous potential in the life of one man.

“Thou...me” indicates the importance of personal relationships, of mutual confidence and trust built up through years of laboring together. When Paul wrote from prison to the church at Philippi, he said that because he was unable to visit them, he would send Timothy, his son in the faith. In essence what he said was, “When Timothy arrives, it will be as though I myself were present.”

Many years earlier Paul had seen the potential of this young man from Asia Minor and decided to invest his life in him.

“Commit” suggests transmitting something from one person to another. It indicates the deposit of a sacred trust. Paul is saying to Timothy, “You are my disciple. This is the relationship that exists between you and me. Now transmit this as a disciple-maker to other disciples.” When we invest in the lives of other people, we transmit not only what we know, but more importantly what we are. Each of us becomes like the people with whom we associate. I am sure that if we could meet Paul and Timothy, we would find them similar in many respects.

Later Paul wrote to him, “But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose,

faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, persecutions” (2 Timothy 3:10,11). This gives a synopsis of what was committed to Timothy by Paul and what in turn was to be committed by Timothy to faithful men.

*Faithful men*—discipling stands or falls with these two little words. Solomon, that wise king of ancient Israel, said, “Most men will proclaim every one his own goodness; but a faithful man who can find?” (Proverbs 20:6) Faithful men and women have always been in short supply. God still seeks them out. “For the eyes of the Lord run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to show Himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward Him” (2 Chron. 16:9).

*Teach others also*—this is where the discipling process begins to pick up a head of steam. We are now in the fourth generation. We began with Paul, then Timothy, then faithful men, and finally others also. Teaching others cannot be done solely through a classroom situation. It entails the imparting of a life—the same in-depth transmission that occurred between Paul and Timothy.

This is a multiplicative process. While the faithful men are teaching others also, Timothy is in the process of raising up more faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. Implementing this vision of multiplying disciples constitutes the only way Christ’s commission can ever ultimately be fulfilled. Other ministries and approaches can augment it but never replace it.

Dawson Trotman, founder of The Navigators, used to say, “Activity is no substitute for production. Production is no substitute for reproduction.” Whatever ministry we are engaged in, it ought to be reproductive.

We have already pointed out that the key to this disciple-making ministry is faithful men and women. What are the qualifications for a faithful person? What qualities of godliness must be

characteristics of his life? Let’s mentally digest a few essential traits of the person who wants to qualify as “a faithful man.”

• ***He has adopted as his objective in life the same objective God sets forth in the Scriptures.***

Jesus said, “But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you” (Matt. 6:33). Rarely did the Lord Jesus ask people to seek something, but here He suggests we seek two things (which are to become the two-fold objective of every believer): His kingdom and His righteousness.

Notice that Jesus does not say to seek money or a wife or a dozen other things that could easily occupy our attention. Rather, He is saying that if we seek His kingdom and His righteousness, He will assume responsibility for meeting every other need in our life.

A friend of mine is a lawyer in a prestigious law firm. Year after year he had the highest earnings in the firm, but his colleagues would not make him a senior partner. The reason was that all these men gave their lives, their time, and their energy to the firm. But because my friend was a Christian, he did not feel that the practice of law rated that high on his priority list. He was a superb lawyer and did as good a job—as the financial records indicated. But his objective was Matthew 6:33.

Being a lawyer was a means to an end, not an end in itself. I believe it was because of his commitment that God entrusted him with so much success.

Whatever your vocation is, it must never be your life objective; for your vocation, no matter how noble it may be, is, in the final analysis, temporal. The Scriptures teach us that we are to give our lives to the eternal and not to the temporal. A faithful man is a man who has chosen eternal objectives for his life.

• ***He is willing to pay any price to have the will of God fulfilled in his life.***

This is a crucial issue. After instructing Timothy to commit to faithful people the things that Timothy had learned from him, Paul goes on to say, “Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No man that warreth *entangleth himself with the affairs of this life*; that he may please Him who hath chosen him to be a soldier” (2 Tim. 2:3,4). Having committed himself to God’s objective, the faithful man steadfastly resists the temptation to become ensnared in the world’s glittering attractions.

Let me ask you: Is there anything between you and God? Are there any little pet sins that you have been unwilling to confess and forsake? Any areas that you have not put under His control? How about your finances? The question is not how much money do you have in the bank, but rather who has the power to draw on your account? Do you know all of your financial assets belong to Jesus Christ? Do you know what it means to give sacrificially? And by that I mean to give what you know from a human perspective you cannot afford.

How about “things?” Do your possessions play an inordinate role in your life? Paul says, “For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things” (Phil. 3:18,19). The Bible says that people “who mind earthly things” are enemies of the cross of Christ.

All that you hold dear to yourself—your family, your health, your dreams, your aspirations and goals—must be held with an open hand. If you desire to fulfill God’s will for your life irrespective of the price, the sum total of all that makes up you must belong to Jesus Christ. He must be free to do with you and take from you as He pleases. You need not open your hand to God

with a sense of fear, for God loves you with a perfect love and has your best interest at heart. But having said that, the faithful person is one who is willing to pay any price to have the will of God accomplished in his life.

• ***He has a love for the Word of God.***

The prophet Jeremiah said, “Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and Thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by Thy name, O Lord God of hosts” (Jer. 15:16). Do you have an insatiable appetite for the Word of God? Do you crave it like you crave food? Are you in submission to the authority of the Word of God? Or do you pick and choose what you believe and obey?

A carpenter whom I have known for years averages ten hours each week in Bible study. This man has never gone to college or Bible school. He is not a learned scholar, but for him the Scriptures have a place of priority. I believe it was St. Jerome who said that the Scriptures are shallow enough for a babe to come and drink without fear of drowning and deep enough for theologians to swim in without ever touching the bottom.

One day I was in the office of a surgeon. In the course of his training, he had to master the contents of scores of books. If he were to operate on me or one of my family, I would certainly want it that way! As I thought about this, it occurred to me that as Christ’s disciples we really only have one Book we must master—the Scriptures. Yet, when I talk to people about investing five hours each week in Bible study and memorizing a couple of verses a week, they look at me as though some monstrous demand is being made on them.

What is your Scripture intake? Do you have a regular Bible reading program? Are you systematically studying the Scriptures? Is your craving for the Bible so great that it is impossible to satisfy?

- ***He has a servant heart.***

Jesus once reminded His disciples that non-Christians enjoy being served and exercising authority over others. In contrast to this He said, “But it shall not be so among you; but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant; even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many” (Matt. 20:26-28).

The motto of the British Royal Military Academy is “Serve to Lead.” This is the same truth Jesus was seeking to communicate to His disciples when He washed their feet (see John 13). If, as their Lord, He washed their feet, they ought to be willing to do the same for others. A person may try to recruit others to help him accomplish his vision. The disciple-maker, however, seeks to invest his life in another to help that person accomplish his own vision.

- ***He puts no confidence in the flesh.***

The Scriptures emphasize this principle often. Paul said, “But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead” (2 Cor. 1:9). Again he said, “For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh), dwelleth no good thing” (Rom. 7:18).

Worldliness and having confidence in the flesh are very closely related, for worldliness can be defined as “living as though you have no need for God.” For example, to leave for work in the morning without first spending time with the Lord to me indicates having a tremendous amount of confidence in oneself. It is equivalent to saying, “I can run my life today without an absolute dependence on God.”

One of the ways of determining exactly how much confidence you have in the flesh is to take an inventory of the number of times you come into your own conversation. How often do you

talk about how great you are and the things you have done?

- ***He does not have an independent spirit.***

There is a great deal of talk today about “doing your own thing.” In this antiauthoritarian society in which we live, the attitude is, “Don’t let people tell you what to do.” Accomplishing the work of God, however, is a team effort. It is done in concert with like-minded brothers and sisters in the faith. There is no room in the life of the disciple for a loner’s attitude—the kind of attitude that says, “If it is not done my way, then I’m not going to do it at all.”

A young man once told me, “I will listen to what God has to say to me, but I will not learn from other people.” To have such an attitude is to live in self-deception. People are often God’s instruments to communicate to other people. God is looking for faithful people who are willing to subjugate their own ideas for the sake of the team.

- ***He has a love for people.***

The Apostle John said, “Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins” (1 John 4:10). To be godly is to be God-like. To be like God is to love people, because God loves people.

I remember reading a Peanuts cartoon in which Charlie Brown said, “I love the world. I think the world is wonderful. It’s people I can’t stand.” Yet, people are the reason Jesus invaded human history. He came to redeem people. That is what the Gospel is all about. The disciple is one who is involved in the lives of people. The faithful person has a love for people.

- ***He does not allow himself to become trapped in bitterness.***

The writer of Hebrews warns us to be watchful “lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any

root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled” (Hebrews. 12:15).

The context of this verse is the giving and receiving of rebuke. Many a person has become bitter because someone pointed out a fault in his life. He takes the attitude, “Huh, who does he think he is, telling me about my sins? Why doesn’t he take the beam out of his own eye before he takes the little speck of sawdust out of mine?”

As a young Christian, I remember hearing someone preach on this verse, and I jotted in the margin of my Bible next to it, “Bitterness comes as a result of real or supposed ill-treatment—it doesn’t matter which.” Somebody may really wrong you, or you can just think that somebody wronged you. In either case, if you are not careful, it can cause you to become bitter.

A wise, old saint once said, “I will never allow another person to ruin my life by making me hate him.”

The root of bitterness can come through a competitive spirit, a breakdown in communications between you and fellow Christians, or feeling that you have gotten a raw deal. I believe more disciples become ineffective in the Christian life because of a root of bitterness than because of any other sin. Faithful Christians guard their hearts well in this critical area.

• ***He has learned to discipline his life.***

One of the most motivating passages of Scripture that I know was penned by the Apostle Paul. “Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air; but I keep under my body, and bring it

into subjection; lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway” (1 Cor. 9:24-27).

One day I sat down and meditated on what would be the most horrible thing that could happen to me as a Christian. The conclusion to which I came was that when I die, God would take me aside and say to me, “Henrichsen, let Me show you what your life could have been like if only you had done what I asked, if only you had been faithful to Me, if only you had disciplined your life and made it really count, as I wanted you to.”

Have you learned to discipline yourself? Have you learned to say no to temptation? Maybe there is a habit that you have been unable to conquer. You know that the Spirit of God would like you to get victory, but you have done nothing about it, having rationalized that, “If God wants me to give up this habit, then He will have to give me the power to do it.” Although this is true, it is avoiding the issue, because God has already given you the power. It has been made available to you through the Holy Spirit. All you need to do is appropriate it—and such appropriation requires discipline. Never blame God for your failure to do what you know is right.

It is the evening that you have set aside for Bible study, but you discover that one of your favorite programs is on television. So you rationalize by saying you will do the study some other time. Not only does the Bible study not get done, but you also stay up so late that night that you are unable to get up the next morning in time to fellowship alone with the Lord before going to work.

It is not the one or two isolated times of compromise that will make the difference. The problem is that once you make an exception, it is so easy to do it again, and again, and again. You sow a thought and reap an act. You sow an act and reap a habit. You sow a habit, and you reap an eternity.



It is evident that one does not become a “faithful person” by being a week-end Christian. The faithful person is one who has applied the Scriptures to every area of his life. The life of discipleship is a life of discipline—the two words come from the same root. A disciple is a disciplined person. Such a life is not easy, but God never promised us it would be. That it is not easy is clearly seen by the fact that there are so few faithful people around today.

The gold medal goes to the athlete who has worked hard, who has learned how to discipline himself, who has learned to say no to the myriad distractions that cross a person’s life, who has a clearcut objective and has resolved in his soul to stay with it until he accomplishes it. ***This is the kind of person God uses.***



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS* **PERSONAL OBJECTIVES AND EVALUATION PLANNER**

Name \_\_\_\_\_ Date(s) \_\_\_\_\_

<b>LIFE OBJECTIVE</b>	Objectives	
	Present Position	
	Obstacles	
	Activities to Overcome Obstacles	
	Plan to Implement	
<b>SCRIPTURE MEMORY</b>	Objectives	
	Present Position	
	Obstacles	
	Activities to Overcome Obstacles	
	Plan to Implement	
<b>BIBLE READING</b>	Objectives	
	Present Position	
	Obstacles	
	Activities to Overcome Obstacles	
	Plan to Implement	



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/2

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ A Principle of Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review A Principle of Discipleship</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete Integrity in Living (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 2</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Pray for a convert</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Hand in Follow-Up Guide for Convert and Disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Hebrews 2:18</i>		
<i>Psalms 119:9,11</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



# **EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

## **A PRINCIPLE OF DISCIPLESHIP**

NOTES

### **Introduction**

In the Sermon on the Mount Jesus introduces us to a very simple principle which every disciple must come to grips with. The ten verses Jesus devotes to it in Matthew 6:24-34 are worth our consideration.

*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon. Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing? Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Therefore do not worry, saying, What shall we eat? or What shall we drink? or What shall we wear? For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you. Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble.*

*Matthew 6:24-34*

# Principle: Singlemindedness Toward God

## NOTES

*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.*

*Matthew 6:24*

In this verse Jesus is communicating a spiritual fact: it is simply not possible for a person to successfully serve two masters. Tragically, many Christians spend most of their lives attempting to do what Jesus has already told them is impossible.

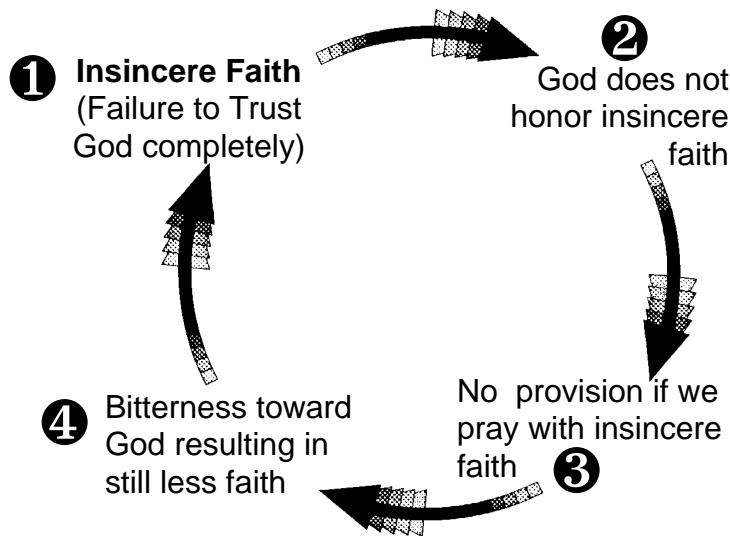
In the Greek this verse says “no one can be a slave to two masters.” If a person tries to take orders from two different authorities, there will certainly be strife and conflict in his heart. Almost always, he will find himself drawn to one and bitter toward the other.

Translating this principle to the Christian experience, we see there is an enduring struggle in our hearts to try to serve the two masters which Jesus identifies as God and mammon. The word mammon literally means “that in which one trusts.” In its original, common usage, it meant wealth, riches, and possessions. The natural inclination of the human heart is to trust in such material things—things which we can see and touch. However, Jesus is calling us to a different lifestyle—one where, living by faith rather than by sight, we trust in Him. Since the two ways of life are at two opposing ends of the spectrum, it is not possible to both trust Christ and money or possessions. If we attempt to do so, we will certainly find ourselves in tremendous conflict.

The conflict comes because God does not honor token *faith*. We may say that we trust God, but deep in our hearts we really don’t think God will come through for us. In order to *save face* for God, we build up a little *nest egg* of financial security to help God out if He should prove unable to meet our needs.

It is not surprising that, if we do pray for God’s provision with such an attitude, He will probably not answer our prayer. We are therefore reinforced in our misconception that God cannot meet our needs, and our faith in Him dwindles—forcing us to put more and more trust in mammon or money.

Consider the following illustration of how insincere faith works itself out in the life of a believer.



Of course, faith is a growing thing in the life of a believer. It is like a spiritual muscle which is strengthened through use. God does not expect a person to have giant-size faith overnight. In the beginning, a person may only have enough faith to trust God for small things; but if that person sincerely asks, believing in God's ability to provide, God will meet his need. Faith is strengthened and he will be able to trust God for larger needs. God is not so much concerned with the size of our faith as He is with its quality. It must be sincere and wholehearted—not half-hearted and insincere.

*Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said, "Why could we not cast him out?" So Jesus said to them, "Because of your unbelief; for assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith as a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible for you."*

*Matthew 17:19,20*

The apostle James described the insincere type of faith this way:

*...he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways.*

*James 1:8*

To sum this up, we could say a small and sincere faith in a great God is of far more value than a giant-size but insincere faith in the wrong thing.

## Dissecting the Principle

In order to more completely understand the principle which Jesus is trying to communicate in Matthew 6, we will examine it point by point. Through a series of commands, examples, questions, facts, and problems, Jesus leads us to a practical application for our own lives.



## Command: Do Not Be Anxious

## NOTES

*Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing?*

*Matthew 6:25*

Jesus is not saying here that we should be irresponsible or unconcerned about the things of life or the needs of the future. On the contrary, the Bible tells us in many places we are to plan carefully, save, and invest for the future.

*Go to the ant, you sluggard! Consider her ways and be wise, which, having no captain, overseer or ruler, provides her supplies in the summer, and gathers her food in the harvest.*

*Proverbs 6:6-8*

*A little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep— so shall your poverty come on you like a robber, and your need like an armed man.*

*Proverbs 6:10,11*

## Anxiety vs. Provision

We are also to be prudent in providing for the physical needs of our families.

*But if anyone does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.*

*1 Timothy 5:8*

However, we are not to become anxious or fearful about these things. The Greek says we are not to have “anxious thoughts” or “worry” about the needs of life. When our everyday needs like food and clothing begin to preoccupy us and cause fearful responses in our hearts, we become double-minded rather than single-minded toward God. If we have our attention focused upon Him, we can be assured that He will provide for us.

*Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God;*

*Philippians 4:6*

*And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.*

*Philippians 4:19*

*Casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.*

*1 Peter 5:7*

If there is a question in your mind as to whom you are really trusting, there is a simple test which will quickly answer it. Simply evaluate yourself—your actions and reactions—when your funds are running low. If you are trusting self and your bank account, you will find your mind and heart full of apprehension, fear, and worry. If you are trusting Christ, your mind and heart will be at peace in the confidence that He will provide.

### **Example: Behold the Birds**

*Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they?*

*Matthew 6:26*

In this example Jesus tries to illustrate for us the message that we have no cause for worry or anxiety.

When was the last time you fed the birds? Occasionally, it is fun to feed them and watch them eat. However, if the birds were dependent upon humans for their food, most of them would have starved to death years ago. Yet, when was the last time you found a bird who had died of malnutrition? Starvation does not seem to be a leading cause of death among the bird populations of the world. Why is this? It is because God is deeply concerned about each one of them and feeds them Himself. He's been doing this consistently and regularly since He created birds.

*Are not two sparrows sold for a copper coin? And not one of them falls to the ground apart from your Father's will.*

*Matthew 10:29*

Imagine the intimate concern of the Creator God for these the smallest and most common of His creatures!

### **Question: Who is of More Value?**

*Are you not of more value than they?*

*Matthew 6:26b*

The answer to this question is obvious. As much as God loves and cares for the birds, He is even more concerned about you. In Romans we are reminded that even when we are in sin or rebellion to God, He keeps extending His love to us.

*But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us.*  
Romans 5:8

*But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not fear therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows.*

*Matthew 10:30,31*

God is so aware and sensitive to us that He even takes note of the number of hairs that come out when we wash our hair (which for some of us is considerably more than others).

### **Question: Does Worry Help?**

*Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? And why do you worry about clothes?*  
*Matthew 6:27,28a*

No matter how much you worry and fret about your height, it will never change. Worry can turn your hair gray and take years off your life span, but it won't help what you were worrying about.

There was once a man who maintained that worry certainly did help because 95% of all the things he worried about didn't happen. However, this fictitious statement further illustrates the futility of anxious thoughts and fears. Many of the things that so preoccupy us, either never change or never happen.

Worrying not only is futile concerning things that cannot be changed, such as our height or stature, it is also useless in providing the everyday needs of life. No one ever got the needed clothing or money to buy it by becoming anxious over it.

### **Example: Consider the Flowers**

*Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.*

*Matthew 6:28b,29*

In His first example Jesus drew from the animal world to prove His point. Now He reaches down into the world of plants. Flowers are not even animals, yet the whole world stands in awe of God's provision for them. He has dressed them in such splendour that even royalty cannot compare with their magnificence.

### **Question: Will He Not Clothe You?**

*Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?*  
Matthew 6:30

God has been demonstrating from the very beginning of time that He is not only able to clothe the earth, he is able to clothe people as well. After Adam and Eve sinned we read:

*Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.*  
Genesis 3:21

God is concerned with our clothing needs as I discovered in my Christian life. After becoming a Christian, I became so excited about giving money to missions that I became a bit overzealous and overcommitted in my pledges. My clothes were becoming a bit shabby, especially my white shirts which I wore for church. Because of my pledges, I did not have enough money to buy new ones. Having discovered this passage in Matthew, I brought my need for white shirts to God in prayer but said nothing to anyone else.

One weekend shortly thereafter I went home to visit my parents. My mother informed me that my dad had just purchased six white shirts for himself which did not fit him comfortably. She said he would like to give half of the shirts to me. Since my father always bought the best quality shirts, I found myself not with the cheapest shirts available (which I probably would have bought for myself) but with some extremely nice white shirts.

This was only my first experience in trusting God for clothes. Many times over the years I have seen Him provide exactly what I needed to be clothed, not shabbily, but very adequately. He really does care for our needs in this area, and as we trust Him and experience His provision, we grow in faith.

### **Problem: "O You of Little Faith"**

This is the heart of the problem. In the Greek the phrase "little faith" really means "of puny persuasions." We have the right answer in our minds, but we lack the conviction to really believe it in our hearts. We

listen to Satan who is telling us that we must trust ourselves and our own monetary resources. We try to help God out financially rather than trusting Him. When we do this, we don't help at all, but rather hinder God's working. We find ourselves caught between the commands of two masters—one of whom is telling us to trust self and money and the Other who is telling us to rest in Him. If we try to obey both masters, we find ourselves caught in the love-hate relationship Jesus described earlier.

## **Faith Pleases God**

The Scriptures remind us how important faith is:

*But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.*

*Hebrews 11:6*

According to this passage (and the entire rest of the Bible) there is only one way to please God—by the demonstration of our faith. Faith is simply trusting God to do what He has promised. Our puny persuasion is strengthened as we trust God and stand strong.

## **Faith is Sometimes Tested**

The Apostle Paul was one who had determined to stand strong in his faith no matter how grim the situation seemed to be. And in Paul's life there were some very grim testings.

*From the Jews five times I received forty stripes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods; once I was stoned; three times I was shipwrecked; a night and a day I have been in the deep; in journeys often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of my own countrymen, in perils of the Gentiles, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; in weariness and toil, in sleeplessness often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness...*

*2 Corinthians 11:24-27*

However, through it all Paul said:

*For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day.*

*2 Timothy 1:12*

Paul's absolute confidence kept him trusting God. This is the kind of faith that pleases God and causes us to remain firm and single-hearted in God.

## **Command Restated: No Anxious Thought**

*Therefore do not worry, saying, "What shall we eat?"  
or "What shall we drink?" or "What shall we wear?"  
Matthew 6:31*

In verse 25 Jesus stated the principle. Now on the basis of His logic and examples concerning the birds and flowers, He draws the conclusion again: *Therefore don't worry or be anxious about food, drink, or clothing.*

Jesus wants us to be absolutely certain that God both *can* and *will* provide the things we need. Though He doesn't actually use the phrase "sovereignty of God," this is exactly what Jesus is teaching. We need to be anchored in the conviction that God will take care of the temporal as He promised in order to be able to give ourselves to the eternal.

## **Fact: God Sees All Our Needs**

*For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your  
heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.  
Matthew 6:32*

There are some people who probably have a right to worry—those who have no Heavenly Father (the Gentiles). They had to work and slave to provide all their own needs in their own human energy. But Jesus reminds us that we not only have a loving father, we also have one who is aware of our smallest needs, even before we are. Nothing is overlooked with God or takes Him by surprise. Therefore, we can rest and be assured that in His time He will provide; and He is *never* late.

## **Application: Kingdom of God First**

*But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteous-  
ness, and all these things shall be added to you.  
Matthew 6:33*

Jesus says on the basis of all these things, there is only one conclusion or application to make. We must put His Kingdom and His righteousness first and leave the rest to Him.

In the very first session of our course we said there are only three things that last forever.

- **GOD**
- **PEOPLE**
- **HIS WORD**

## NOTES

If we are to give ourselves in exchange for eternal things, we must invest in these three areas. Notice how three external qualities are mentioned in Matthew 6:33.

• **GOD**—God’s Kingdom (His authority on earth) is what we must put as top priority in our lives. First, He must reign in our hearts as supreme Lord of all areas of our own personal lives.

• **PEOPLE**—The Kingdom of God is made up of all people who have crowned Him Lord of their lives. In seeking first His Kingdom, we must not only honor Him as Lord personally, we must work to win others to Christ and extend the power of God over more and more people. World rulers think of kingdoms in terms of real estate. Jesus’ kingdom is people.

• **WORD**—The righteousness of God is found in the Word of God. In this book God expresses His great unchangeable truths.

*The judgments of the LORD are true and righteous altogether.*

*Psalm 19:9b*

<b>Seek Ye First</b>	
<b>The Kingdom of God</b>	<b>His Righteousness</b>
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Personal Lordship to Christ</li> <li>• Extension of His reign over People</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• The Word of God</li> </ul>

Jesus says if we will give ourselves to these three things and make them first priorities in our lives, he will provide the mammon or material things. Since God promises to provide the mammon, there is no need to serve the mammon. We can be single-minded and can set our hearts on God.

## **Command Restated: No Anxiety About Tomorrow**

*Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble.*

*Matthew 6:34*

Finally Jesus restates His command, this time in bite-size pieces. God does not expect or request us to be anxious about tomorrow, but simply to trust Him for today and its needs. When tomorrow becomes today, we will have a new supply of grace to meet the needs it contains.

*Through the Lord's mercies we are not consumed,  
because His compassions fail not. They are new  
every morning; great is Your faithfulness.*

*Lamentations 3:22,23*

By learning to trust Jesus one step at a time, we can rejoice in the present and relax about the future. We will find it unnecessary to serve two masters because our Master meets all our needs.





## *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

# **BIBLE STUDY: INTEGRITY IN LIVING**

We struggle each day with issues of right versus wrong, good versus evil. We often tend to rationalize our behavior and compromise God's standard of integrity. We may explain away or ignore these sins. These are the "vices of the virtuous"—sins which may have become accepted as the normal standard. But God is holy, and we must not allow any compromise with sin to infiltrate our lives.

VERSES Pg. 728

## **The Struggle for Integrity**

1. What does God say about the need for integrity or honesty? Leviticus 19:11 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

2. Read Jeremiah 17:9.

a. What fact in your life makes the struggle for honest living so intense? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

b. Can you list an example of when you tried to justify an action which you knew to be wrong? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

c. How did God work in your life to show you that it was wrong? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

3. What are some ways we can be deceived?

### **By Ourselves**

James 1:22 \_\_\_\_\_

1 John 1:8 \_\_\_\_\_

### **By Others**

Romans 16:17,18 \_\_\_\_\_

Ephesians 4:14 \_\_\_\_\_

## By Satan

2 Corinthians 11:3,4 \_\_\_\_\_

Genesis 3:1 \_\_\_\_\_

4. Since we can be deceived so easily, how can we know when we have sinned?

Psalms 139:23,24 \_\_\_\_\_

Hebrews 4:12 \_\_\_\_\_

## Dishonesty Exposed

5. Compare 2 Corinthians 8:21 and Acts 24:16.

a. What guidelines helped Paul in his daily living? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. In order to keep a clear conscience, what do you suppose Paul did when God exposed a sin in his life?

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. Can you think of any area in your life right now in which you do not have a completely clear conscience?

☐ Yes

☐ No

d. If you answered "Yes," take a moment to confess that sin frankly to God. Ask for his help and wisdom in dealing with it. Give thought to what steps you can take to gain a clear conscience. (Check one or more boxes below.)

☐ I have confessed it.

☐ I have asked God for His help and wisdom.

☐ I have given thought to steps I can take to gain a clear conscience.

6. We must be careful to avoid hypocrisy.

a. How did Jesus describe hypocrites? Mark 7:6-8 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. What is one reason this style of living is dishonest? Romans 2:23,24 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. Give an example of how God's name might be dishonored because of us. \_\_\_\_\_

7. Our lives should be able to withstand close examination by other people. We should live honestly—not pretending to be something we are not in order to create a false impression. Imagine an invention that could tell us what a person is really like and what he is thinking.

a. Would you want this invention used on you? \_\_\_\_\_

b. Why or why not? \_\_\_\_\_

8. Read Acts 5:1-11

a. Why was this an act of dishonesty toward the Holy Spirit? \_\_\_\_\_

b. What effect did the death of Ananias and Sapphira have on the other believers in Jerusalem? \_\_\_\_\_

9. Meditate on 2 Corinthians 8:21, then consider the following list. Are any of these problem areas for you? Check the box for any that are.

☐ exaggeration

☐ "white lies"

☐ cheating

☐ failure to keep promises

☐ allowing people to believe false impressions

How can you deal with this problem? \_\_\_\_\_

10. Read Psalm 15:1-5 and list at least five qualities of an honest person.

11. What does Paul's statement in 1 Thessalonians 2:10 reflect about the way he lived?

# The Practice of Honesty

12. Honesty should be displayed in all aspects of our lives. List below some of the areas we might neglect.

Romans 13:6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

Colossians 3:23-25 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Peter 2:13,14 \_\_\_\_\_

Two essential standards for honesty are:

- *Make sure everything you own was obtained honestly.*
- *When you speak, speak the truth. There is no such thing as a “white lie.”*

13. Read 1 Samuel 15:10-23.

a. Was Saul’s statement honest? \_\_\_\_\_

b. In what way did he disobey? \_\_\_\_\_

c. What was Saul’s response to the accusation? \_\_\_\_\_

d. How did he try to justify his disobedience? \_\_\_\_\_

e. Have you ever used a similar method? \_\_\_\_\_

f. In what does God delight? 1 Samuel 15:22 \_\_\_\_\_

## Honesty in Speech

14. What does your speech indicate? Matthew 12:34,35 \_\_\_\_\_

15. How does the psalmist describe the tongue? Psalm 52:2-4 \_\_\_\_\_

16. Why are lying and abusive speech inconsistent with the Christian life? Colossians 3:8-10 \_\_\_\_\_

17. Can you think of a personal situation in which dishonest action led to lying? Explain.

---

---

Any distortion of the truth—in word, actions, attitudes, or silence— is deceitful and lying.

18. Paraphrase the following passages:

Ephesians 4:29 \_\_\_\_\_

---

Colossians 4:6 \_\_\_\_\_

---

19. Can you apply one of the verses in question 18 to a relationship with someone you know?

Who? \_\_\_\_\_

What will you do? \_\_\_\_\_

When will you do it? \_\_\_\_\_

## **Remember These Points:**

Add a sentence or two to the following statements to summarize the most important things you learned from each section of this chapter.

### **The Struggle for Integrity**

Deceit creates a struggle and exposes the need for integrity. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

---

### **Dishonesty Exposed**

Our goal is a clear conscience and a transparent life. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

---

## **The Practice of Honesty**

God sets forth standards for honesty in the Scriptures. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

## **Honesty in Speech**

Our speech exposes and expresses our heart. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**



# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## **Chapter 2**

# **Jesus as Lord**

One of the men on The Navigators staff is a Jamaican. Some years ago, he worked for a banana company near his home town of Kingston (in Jamaica). He was doing so well in the company that one day one of the executives invited him into his office to discuss his future.

After assessing the young man's potential, the executive said, "You have a great future with our company, with excellent prospects for rapid promotion. But we are looking for committed men. If you are going to be a success, I want you to know that you have to give your life in exchange for bananas."

The young man thought about it for a few moments and decided that he could not sign away his life for bananas.

Lordship involves giving Jesus Christ the number one place above all the possible "bananas" in your life.

This Chapter deals with four aspects involved in making Christ the Lord of our lives.

- ***The fact that Jesus is Lord whether we want Him to be or not.***
- ***Reasons we don't want to acknowledge Him as Lord.***
- ***What it means to acknowledge Him as Lord.***
- ***Why Jesus wants to be our Lord.***

Let's look at these one at a time.

### **JESUS IS LORD WHETHER WE WANT HIM TO BE OR NOT**

Jesus Christ is the Creator of all things and "by the word of His power," He holds everything together. "For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers; all things were created by Him, and for Him, and He is before all things, and by Him all things consist; and He is the Head of the Body, the Church; who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence" (Col. 1:16-18).

Have you ever considered how little of your life you control? Did you decide when you would be born? Or who your parents would be? Or in what country you would be born? Did you decide the color of your skin? Your eyes? Your hair? Did you decide your intelligence or your gifts and talents? How about you height—did you determine that? Or your appearance, whether you would be good looking or rather plain? The answer to all these questions is no. In every one of these areas and in many more, you have no say in the matter. Your vote counts for absolutely nothing!

Then at what point do you exercise control? The Bible suggests that you control a small but important part of your life, namely your will. Lordship has to do with your will. It involves surrendering it to Jesus Christ. It means that Jesus is Lord of all of you, not just part of you. In making this decision of the will, remember that he has control over most things that concern you, whether you like it or not.

## WHY WE DO NOT ACKNOWLEDGE CHRIST AS LORD

Though every person has his own reasons not to acknowledge Jesus as Lord, some reasons come up with remarkable frequency.

- ***He may ask us to do something that we do not want to do.***

Of course, He will. If this were not so, there would be no issue involved. When you make Jesus Christ Lord of your life, you can count on Him asking you to do things you would rather not do.

Abraham did not want to offer up Isaac as a sacrifice. Moses did not want to go before Pharaoh. Joseph did not want to spend all those years in prison. Jesus Christ did not want to go to the cross.

Nobody likes the cross. Nobody likes to die. Nobody likes to deny himself. But this is what lordship is all about. A disciple is a *disciplined* one. He is one who says no to what he wants in deference to what his Lord wants. The disciple does not pamper himself by satisfying his wants and desires in a self-gratifying fashion.

When Jesus Christ is Lord of your life, every area is under His jurisdiction—your thoughts, your actions, your plans, your vocation, your leisure time, and your life goal. All of these are under His Lordship.

- ***We think we know what is best for us.***

Nothing could be farther from the truth. A child left alone would kill himself. He might eat the wrong things, or run out in to the street, or grab hold of a sharp knife, or play with something equally dangerous. The parent must keep constant watch over his child. That is, the parent must be lord of the child's life. In fact, the law requires that this be so; and when the parent refuses to exercise such lordship, the courts hold him accountable.

When we reach physical maturity, however, we think that things suddenly change. This is where

we make our mistake. A child left to himself will probably hurt himself. As mature adults, left to ourselves, we *do* hurt ourselves. Statistics reveal that more people die each year in automobile accidents than by cancer and heart disease combined.

A group of scientists have warned that the United States has enough atomic warheads to destroy every human being on the face of this earth—the equivalent of one railroad boxcar load of dynamite for every man, woman, and child in the world. And this is to say nothing about the atomic warheads that other nations of the world have.

Have you ever thought about the fact that we hire policemen to watch over us to make sure that we don't do anything wrong. Yet, we have the audacity to say that we know what is best for our lives.

- ***We are not sure that God has our best interests at heart.***

If God wanted to make it hard on us, can you imagine what He could do? If He wanted to make us miserable and plague us with difficulties, He could make life absolutely intolerable. One might argue that God does not want to get involved in our lives, but it is ridiculous to say that He wants to hurt us.

However, you cannot argue that Jesus Christ does not want to get involved in your life. The very issue of Lordship revolves around the fact that He does want to get involved in your life. Listen to what He says through the prophet Jeremiah. "For I know the plans I have for you says the Lord. They are plans for good and not for evil, to give you a future and hope" (Jer. 29:11, The Living Bible).

## WHAT IT MEANS TO ACKNOWLEDGE HIM AS LORD

The implications of recognizing Jesus Christ as Lord are readily seen in the prayer He taught His disciples. "After this manner therefore pray ye: 'Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be



done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen” (Matt. 6:9-13).

Notice that the prayer begins, ***Our Father***. Jesus did not instruct us to say “My Father,” but “Our Father.” The disciple must be able to identify with people where they are, to sit where they sit. The disciple himself is not one who has arrived. On the contrary, he is a learner, a pilgrim, one who is on a quest to make his life all that God would have it be. Therefore, he must understand the needs and frailties of people.

***Hallowed be Thy name.*** Jesus did not pray that His name would be hallowed, but that the Father’s name would be hallowed. Acknowledging His Lordship means surrendering your name.

Are you interested in making a name for yourself? Are you desirous of being recognized by people? Are your life goals self-serving, to make a great scientific discovery, do well in business, be married to an important person—anything that would bring you recognition? To have Jesus as your Lord means to desire that His name, not yours, be hallowed.

***Thy kingdom come.*** God’s desire is to rule here on earth just as He rules in heaven.

He is in the process of building His kingdom. Are you untiringly laboring to build the kingdom of Christ, or are you busy building your own little kingdom? In your church, is it *your* Sunday School class, *your* Board of Deacons or Elders, *your* building project, *your* missionary program? Do these things get your attention, or can you in all integrity say it is Christ’s kingdom that you are seeking to build?

A way to seek God’s kingdom is through evangelism by “bringing men from darkness to light and from the power of Satan to God.” Are you actively involved in evangelism? How many

non-Christians do you know who would consider you a close friend?

***Thy will be done.*** Again notice the Lord Jesus did not say, “My will be done,” but “Thy will be done.” This is the same thought that Jesus communicated when He said, “I can of Mine own self do nothing. As I hear, I judge, and My judgement is just; because I seek not Mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.” (John 5:30).

You cannot pray, “Thy will be done,” unless you are actively involved in finding the will of God for your life and doing it. Begin by doing what you know through the Scriptures to be the will of God. If you do this, the Holy Spirit will be faithful to make clear those areas that are uncertain.

***Give us this day our daily bread.*** We can truly pray this prayer only if our attitude is, “All I have comes from and belongs to Jesus.” Otherwise, why ask Him for something that “naturally comes to us anyhow”? Paul put it this way, “What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price; therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s” (1 Cor. 6:19,20).

Because Jesus bought you at the price of His blood, you are not your own. You belong to Him. Lordship means recognizing this fact and surrendering all that you are and have and hope to be to Him.

Think over the things that you own which you consider to be precious. It might be your favorite crystal or china, or it may be your sports equipment. Maybe it is your stereo or your automobile. Whatever it is, ask yourself who owns it? If it truly belongs to the lord Jesus Christ, then of course you will not mind making it available to Jesus to be used as He sees fit.

***And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.*** Jesus is telling us to pray, “Lord, I want You to forgive me in just the same way

that I forgive other people.” Could you say that? Could you settle for God forgiving you in proportion to how you forgive others?

Lordship leads to a mutual commitment, involving not only receiving, but giving. Grace is God’s willingness to commit Himself totally to us. Lordship is our willingness to commit ourselves totally to God. Everybody wants God to commit Himself totally to him, but few are willing to commit themselves totally to Him.

***And lead us not into temptation.*** Here Jesus is praying that the Father will not lead us into situations where we can be tempted. There are many situations in life that are not wrong in themselves, but they provide opportunities for Satan to overpower us.

Jesus did not say, “Lead us not into sin.” He said, “Lead us not into *temptation*.” To pray this prayer means that I am willing to surrender questionable things. I am not only willing to surrender those things that are sin, but I am also willing to surrender all those areas of my life that tend to lead me into temptation.

You yourself know what these areas are. To make Jesus Christ Lord of your life means that you are willing to lay them aside.

***Deliver us from [the] evil [one].*** This is the same prayer that the Lord Jesus offered for His disciples on the night of His betrayal (see John 17:15).

Lordship involves the recognition that there is no way we can fight our own battles. Christ, and he alone, must keep us. No one in his own strength can do battle with the enemy and win. Even Jesus Christ defeated Satan only at the price of the cross.

James, the brother of our Lord Jesus, puts it this way, “Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you” (James 4:7). The devil will flee from us if we do two things: First, *submit* ourselves to the Lord, and second, *resist* him in the Lord’s strength.

## **WHY DOES JESUS WANT TO BE LORD OF OUR LIVES?**

Why does Christ bother to get involved in our lives? Why does He not just leave us in our misery? This is one of the great mysteries of the Bible. But the Scriptures are very clear that He loves us and *does* want to be Lord of our lives. When I look at my own sinfulness, my own propensity for evil, I must confess that this is a staggering thought.

I know a salesman from Oklahoma City who uses a small aircraft for business trips because he travels to many out-of-the-way spots across the country. He was flying once over some rugged terrain when he saw an automobile trying to pass a large truck. It was obvious that the driver of the car was extremely impatient to get around the truck; his car crossed back and forth from one lane to the other.

My friend decided to throttle back and watch. Each time the auto sought to pass the truck, it would either reach a double line, a hill, or a bend, or meet another car coming in the opposite direction. From my friend’s perspective, he could see several miles down the highway, and he thought, “If I could enter into communication with the man in the automobile, I could tell him when it was safe to pass and when it was unsafe.”

As we are on the move in this great adventure called life, we cannot see around the bend into tomorrow or over the hill into next week. Consequently, we are not sure when it is safe to pass. Because Jesus Christ is Lord of all, seeing the end from beginning, He does know.

His willingness to be our Lord reveals His desire to get involved in our lives so he can tell us when it is safe to move ahead and when it is best not to move. Would we not be extremely foolish to turn down such a gracious offer?



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

## Convert Follow-Up Guide

Trainer	✓	Date Completed
Trainee		
<p><b>1. I (the trainer) am currently praying for this convert.</b></p> <p>_____</p>	_____	_____
<p><b>2. He has assurance of salvation.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• We have gone through the Bridge Illustration together and the convert understands the Gospel as presented in 1/7.</li> <li>• He has memorized 1 John 5:11-13.</li> <li>• He has done “Assurance of Salvation” Bible Study 1/4.</li> <li>• I have gone through the lesson on Assurance in 1/9 to make sure my convert understands assurance of salvation.</li> <li>• He has expressed a real assurance of salvation.</li> </ul>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>
<p><b>3. The convert is having a Quiet Time.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• We have discussed the importance of a Quiet Time 1/10 and completed the appointment with God assignment.</li> <li>• He completed all “Appointment With God” assignments 1/10-1/14</li> <li>• We have had, or shared our Quiet Time together at least twice.</li> </ul>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>
<p><b>4. He realizes the need for Christian fellowship.</b></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• We have discussed the principle of fellowship from Hebrews 10:24,25 and Matthew 18:20.</li> <li>• He meets and identifies with Christians.</li> <li>• He has a church home or is praying about one.</li> </ul>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>
<p><b>5. He has memorized all 5 of the Assurance Verses</b> (Outside Reading Assignments 1/4-1/8 <i>Beginning With Christ</i> ).</p>	<p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p>

	✓	Date Completed
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• He has read the complete series, <i>Beginning With Christ</i>, 1/4-1/8, and we have discussed each verse and its meaning.</li> <li>• At one sitting, he has correctly quoted to me all five verses with the references.</li> </ul>	_____	
<b>6. He has finished “Lessons on Assurance” Bible Study 1/4-1/8</b>	_____	_____
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• We have discussed the five lessons.</li> </ul>	_____	
<b>7. This person has evidenced new life in Christ and demonstrates a desire to mature in Christ. This has been demonstrated during the time I have worked with him by his:</b>	_____	_____
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Owning and reading a New Testament</li> <li>• Having a Quiet Time regularly.</li> <li>• Sharing his conversion with others.</li> </ul>	_____	
<b>8. The converts desire to grow has been demonstrated by:</b>	_____	_____
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Completion of Book 1 in <i>ETS</i></li> </ul>		
<b>9. We have spent time together in at least two secular activities.</b>	_____	_____
Name of activity: (1) _____	_____	
(2) _____	_____	
<b>10. My immediate leader knows this person and has gone through this guide with me. He agrees that this person meets the requirements of an <i>ETS</i> convert.</b>	_____	_____
<b>Comments:</b> _____		
_____		
_____		
_____		
_____		
_____		



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

## **Disciple Follow-Up Guide**

Trainer	✓	Date Completed
Trainee		
<p>1. I (the trainer) am currently praying daily for this individual.</p> <p>2. He has made a major Lordship of Christ decision for his life, either in a group meeting or after discussing appropriate Scriptures (Matthew 6:33, Luke 9:23) with me personally.</p> <p>3. He is attempting to put Christ first in the following areas of his life:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• <b>Reputation</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—He has told his family he is a Christian. _____</li> <li>—He prays before meals in public places. _____</li> </ul> </li> <li>• <b>Money and possessions</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—I have shared with him the Scriptural teaching of stewardship and he is giving at least 10%. _____</li> </ul> </li> <li>• <b>Self (personality, mind, body)</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—He makes a real effort to overcome sin and weaknesses and is making progress. _____</li> </ul> </li> <li>• <b>Friends</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—He has told his non-Christian friends he is a Christian and is willing to separate from those who lead him back into sin. _____</li> </ul> </li> <li>• <b>Education</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—He seeks God's will through counsel. _____</li> <li>—He doesn't let studies have priority over his daily walk with God. _____</li> </ul> </li> <li>• <b>Dating</b> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—He has considered the Scriptural teaching on this subject and sought counsel in the matter. _____</li> </ul> </li> </ul>		

	✓	Date Completed
<p>—He practices the Biblical standard of moral conduct with the opposite sex.</p> <p>• <b>Marriage</b></p> <p>—He is working to have a Scriptural home.</p> <p>• <b>Career</b></p> <p>—He does not let his avocation hinder his spiritual development or personal responsibility to fulfilling the Great Commission.</p> <p>—He knows how to set objectives and is able to plan and schedule his priorities so he is able to meet his objective.</p> <p>• <b>Leisure Time</b></p> <p>—He knows the value of planning leisure time and does it with the Lord rather than without Him.</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	
<p><b>4. He has a consistent daily devotion time.</b></p> <p>—We have discussed together the Bible concept of Quiet Time from Lesson 1/10.</p> <p>—I (the trainer) have had a minimum of two Quiet Times with this man.</p> <p>—He has not missed more than five times in thirty days.</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p>
<p><b>5. He is developing his prayer life.</b></p> <p>—We have discussed the principle of prayer from Lesson 1/11.</p> <p>—We have discussed the use of a prayer list and he has one in use from Lesson 1/11.</p> <p>—He is presently experiencing answers to prayer.</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p>
<p><b>6. He has demonstrated faithfulness and desire to learn and apply the Word of God through regular Bible Study and Scripture Memory.</b></p> <p>—He has completed lessons on Christian living. (Bible Studies 1/9-1/16)</p> <p>—He has completed Bible Studies 2/1-3/13.</p> <p>—He has completed memorizing the verses from Lessons 1/9-1/13.</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p>

	✓	Date Completed
— He has completed memory verses from Lessons 2/ 1-3/14.	_____	
<b>7. He manifests a heart for witnessing, and gives his testimony and shares the Gospel regularly and with increasing skill.</b>		_____
—I have shared with him the Biblical concept of witnessing from Lesson 1/7.	_____	
—He has completed “How to Share Your Testimony Effectively” (Lesson 2/4) and has shared his testimony in my presence.	_____	
—He can present the “Bridge” illustration with skill.	_____	
—He has once in my presence presented the Gospel and testimony to a non-Christian, and we have afterwards evaluated the presentation.	_____	
—He has witnessed, on his own initiative, at least three times in the last six months.	_____	
<b>8. He has demonstrated a servant’s heart in his sincere interest in helping others.</b>		_____
—He understands the Spiritual injunction of serving and is trying to build this area into his life.	_____	
—He willingly serves as there is need.	_____	
<b>9. He attends church regularly, displaying love and unity.</b>		_____
—He attends church three-fourths of the time during the use of this checklist.	_____	
<b>10. I have gone through the ETS material on:</b>		_____
• Basic Christian Living (Lesson 1/9-1/15)	_____	
• Personal and Spiritual Management (Lesson 1/4,1/ 5, 2/1, 2/2, 2/5, 2/15, and 2/16)	_____	
• Evangelism (Lesson 1/6, 1/7, 1/8, 2/3, 2/4, 2/6, and 2/7)	_____	
<b>11. He is a learner—open and teachable.</b>		_____
—He is not argumentative and defensive when corrected by me.	_____	
—He is able to see the other man’s point of view, accepting and appreciating valid contributions	_____	

	✓	Date Completed
<p>—He is willing to share his life with me, not living behind a false veneer.</p> <p><b>12. I (the trainer) am presently meeting with this potential disciple once a month for man-to-man time (not missing more than one month in four).</b></p> <p><b>13. My immediate supervisor knows this man, has gone through this checklist with me and agrees this man meets the requirements of an ETS disciple.</b></p>	<p>_____</p>	<p>_____</p> <p>_____</p> <p>_____</p>





# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/3

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Advanced Follow-Up \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Leading Bible Discussion I \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Leading Bible Discussion I</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete Character in Action (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 3</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Share Bridge</i>		
<i>Complete Evangelism Report</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Matthew 6:33</i>		
<i>Luke 9:23</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



## *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

# **LEADING BIBLE STUDY DISCUSSION I**

NOTES

## **Introduction**

In many parts of the world, committed Christians are experiencing the dynamic impact of small home Bible discussion groups. Sparked by a growing hunger to know God's Words, people are banding together to study and discuss the truths of Scripture. The fellowship and personal interaction over the Bible along with mutual commitment to apply the discovered truths make the Bible discussion group one of the most effective avenues of Christian growth.

We have already examined the "Word Hand" and we discussed the importance of personal Bible Study. We will now learn how the Bible discussion group can be effectively used to encourage the regular and systematic study of the Word which is so indispensable to a vital Christian walk.

The early church met in small groups in the homes of believers. They studied the Scriptures, prayed, fellowshiped and set about reaching their community with the Gospel. The Book of Acts records their stories and the impact they made on the world for the cause of Christ.

*But when they did not find them, they dragged Jason and some brethren to the rulers of the city, crying out, "These who have turned the world upside down have come here too."*

*Acts 17:6*

It only takes two people to get a group started. That group can spawn others which in turn will affect a whole community for Christ.

## **Why Discussion Groups Are Helpful**

There are at least five ways in which a Bible Study Discussion is beneficial for a Christian.

- ***Provides incentive to do and complete Bible study***

Because the group will be actually discussing what each member has prepared, everyone will be motivated to complete his Bible Study.

- ***Enables people to study beyond their limits***

Being a part of a group exposes each individual to the ideas and discoveries of the other members.

- ***Creates an atmosphere conducive for sharing***

Personal discoveries, questions, observations, problems or needs find expression and help in a discussion group. An atmosphere of love and acceptance builds confidence and allows members the freedom to talk about the Scriptures without fear of criticism.

- ***Fosters positive Christian fellowship***

Group members can develop solid personal relationships in an informal environment. They can learn how to pray, share and bear the burdens of others.

- ***Equips Christians with a tool to help others***

Bible discussion groups are one of the most effective and simplest tools available to Christians today as they seek to help fulfill Christ's Commission to make disciples in every nation. Even a young Christian can learn to lead a group if he is willing to do the preparation.

## **Starting a Discussion Group**

When a person understands the value of a Bible discussion group, his next question will certainly be, "Where do I find people for such a group? Most people don't seem to be interested in the Bible or in spiritual things. How do I get started?"

### **Pray**

Begin praying daily that God would help you get a discussion group started. Ask God to attract the people He desires to the study, to unify them and to lead and encourage the group.

*If any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally and without reproach, and it will be given to him.*

*James 1:5*

## **The Objectives**

It is important that the leader and the group understand the objectives of your Bible Study Discussion Group. Objectives do three things:

- ***They tell you where you are headed or what you are trying to accomplish.***

- ***They help you evaluate your progress and detect deviation so the proper correction can be made.***

- ***They are the basis of all decision making and help you to be productive rather than just active.***

## Sample Objectives For a Group

*The objective of our Bible Study Discussion group is threefold in nature:*

1. To encourage Bible study and discussion for the purpose of knowing God better and personally.
2. To apply His commandments to our personal lives so that we walk in obedience to His Word.
3. To learn to share our faith with the world we are commanded to disciple.

*We will do this by studying a portion of Scripture and discussing it in the group each week. We will aim to apply the passage personally and digest it well enough so as to be able to share the principles with others whom we hope to disciple.*

*Our objective will be accomplished when these three objectives are a reality in our lives weekly and not just a philosophy or theology.*

## Select the Type of Study

Before you start inviting people to a discussion group, determine what type of Bible study you want to do. There are many good materials available for any type of Bible study. Some Navigator materials that may be helpful to you are:

- *Leader's Guide for Evangelistic Bible Studies* (Using the Gospel of John) — The leader is the only one who needs to prepare for this type of study.
- *Design for Discipleship* — This series of seven booklets helps a Christian grow as a disciple of Jesus Christ. This series is very good for people with a Bible Study background. There are more thought questions which require some previous knowledge of basic Bible truths.
- *Search the Scriptures* — A method of studying books of the Bible one chapter at a time is presented.
- *Studies in Christian Living* — This series of nine books encourages growth as a disciple of Jesus Christ. It takes you from a simple question-and-answer type of Bible study to a chapter analysis study. This series is ideal for people who have little or no Christian background because it presumes no prior knowledge of the Scriptures. But

the later books can also be used very successfully with any group of young believers who are eager to learn basic Bible doctrine as well as how to analyze passages for themselves.

## **Invite the People**

Once you obtain the materials you need, begin inviting people to the study. Whom you invite depends upon what type of study you are planning. For example, you would invite non-Christians to an evangelistic study.

When inviting people be specific. Tell them what you are planning to do, when you plan to meet and how many weeks it will take to complete the course of study. It is a good rule to have the first study course last no longer than six weeks. Then you can make plans with the group for further study if they show continued interest. One way to get a neighborhood Bible discussion group started is to invite several people to your home for coffee and dessert. Then you can share your desire to start a Bible discussion group and ask them to join you.

In a dormitory or barracks just invite people to the first session. At work you may find a few people interested in joining you for discussion during the lunch hour.

## **Considerations for Inviting the People**

- Invite people who have common interest background, education, and vocation, age or location.
- Be positive and enthusiastic about the study.
- Explain that in order to have an interesting and profitable study, you are going to ask them to commit themselves for a specific period of time and to do the individual preparation necessary for the study.
- Don't pressure people to come. Interested people make the best members.
- Keep the group small enough to be manageable. Five to eight people is ideal. A group this size is big enough to provide an interesting discussion, but small enough for everyone to share.
- If only one person comes, rejoice. That's all you need to get a group started.

People often accept an invitation to a Bible study and then fail to come. It is easy for them to forget something that is not part of their normal routine. The devil desires to keep people from God's Word and will set obstacles and distractions in the way. Remind them of the study a day or two in advance. After the first couple of weeks this shouldn't be

necessary. By then they will have discovered the profit of their Bible discussion group.

## Prepare the Lesson and Discussion

### Preparation

A successful Bible study leader needs to prepare for every session. Purposeful, stimulating and rewarding discussions seldom “just happen.” It requires careful and prayerful preparation, and the degree of success is usually proportional to the thoroughness of the preparation.

What kinds of preparation are necessary for the leader to do?

#### *The Leader Must Prepare Himself...*

**...in the art of discussion leading.** It will be helpful for you as the leader to read these notes periodically. As your experience increases, your understanding of these principles will deepen and these notes will become a part of you. But until that time, it will help to review the suggestions listed in these notes.

**...in the study itself.** In order to lead well, the leader’s personal preparation must be adequate. If you have already done the study some time ago, review it in depth before leading it. Many leaders become slack in their review, and as a result the discussion suffers.

**...in prayer.** The most important part of any discussion is you, the leader—not materials or methods. Personal preparation in prayer is therefore essential. You should pray for the following things:

- *for your own personal dependence upon God during the discussion,*
- *for wisdom to lead the discussion well,*
- *for sensitivity to each member of the group,*
- *and that the Holy Spirit will cause those things to be emphasized which He wants to teach the group.*

### Practical Considerations

Many practical details affect the success of a group. You need to plan in advance for your guests. Have every thing ready when they arrive so you can devote your attention to the people and not to last-minute details which should have been taken care of before.

- ***Meet in a comfortable atmosphere.***

Make sure the room is not too large or too small. The warmness of a living room, the unity of a kitchen table, or the informality of a dorm room or barracks all lean themselves to a learning atmosphere.



- ***Make appropriate physical arrangements.***

Meet in a circle because this is the best arrangement to see and discuss with one another. Plan your seating in advance. Don't sink into a soft chair—be as high or higher than your group for good eye contact.

- ***Maintain good lighting.***

Lighting not only helps illuminate the room, it also creates a warm feeling. No one should have to look into the sun or toward a bright window.

- ***Provide proper ventilation.***

Too much heat or cold will make group members uncomfortable. Start with a well-aired room which is warm enough to be comfortable.

- ***Guard against distractions.***

Pets, TV's, radios, etc. take attention away from the discussion. Make arrangements with babysitters if they are needed.

- ***Start and stop on time.***

Starting promptly will encourage late comers to be on time. Stopping on time is courteous and thoughtful since people may have other commitments after the meeting. It is better to quit on time and not finish the study than to cover every last point.

- ***Consider refreshments.***

These are not essential, though they do encourage people to stay around and meet informally after the study. If you have refreshments, let them be simple so as not to require extravagant preparation which could be better spent in prayer for the Bible study. Elaborate refreshments can even become a distraction rather than a help to a discussion group.

You will discover other practical details as you lead your group. Strive for the best possible situation. However, remember God working in hearts is the key to successful Bible study.

## **The First Meeting**

This is the most important meeting since you will set the stage for the following weeks. It is almost impossible to overestimate the importance of the first meeting. The impressions created during this meeting may influence the participation of the members for weeks to come.

Remember this is a group discussion. You are the leader, not the director. Be unpretentious and honest. Don't assume airs of superiority, but exhibit the quiet confidence that comes from having a plan and knowing how to execute it.

The effective discussion leader will act as a chairman and guide, not as a teacher or authority, because he realizes the authority is the Word of God and the teacher is the Holy Spirit. The Scriptures are the sword of the Spirit. The leader's role is to guide the discussion, encouraging personal interaction according to each individual's need. This means the Bible will be the focus of attention, not the leader. Your major objectives for this meeting are fourfold in nature.

### • ***Get Acquainted***

Honest discussion and interaction takes place best when people know one another. As each person arrives introduce him to the others. To help the people remember each other's names call each person by name as often as possible. Name tags can also be useful.

Help them get to know one another by having each person share about himself. Start with general, impersonal questions. Home town, occupation and hobbies are good topics to begin with. You should share first. This helps establish what to cover and how long to take. If the group is comprised of Christians, you can have each share a brief testimony. By this time everyone should feel relaxed in the group.

### • ***Introduce the Materials***

Now it is time to introduce the group to the Bible study plan and give them any materials they will need. If you are using printed materials, be sure to go over the introduction and instructions carefully. To help everyone pay close attention, go around the circle having each person read a paragraph. Stop and discuss what has been read whenever a question arises.

### • ***Set a Standard***

It is also important that everyone adheres to a set of standards for the study. You, as a leader, should suggest these standards. Be sure not to assume a dictatorial attitude and start telling everyone what is expected. Instead you might say something like, "Can we agree that everyone will finish the study before the discussion each week?" (or "complete the assigned lesson?") Everyone should concur on the importance of attendance at the discussions and the preparation of the Bible study.

It is crucial that we also agree that the Bible will be our final authority for the Bible will take precedence over every other book, idea or feeling in the discussion. Even in an evangelistic study where some members may not believe that the Bible is God's Word, you can establish this important ground rule by saying: "Since we have all come here to study what the Bible has to say, let's establish that we will look to the Bible for the last word on whatever we are discussing." Most non-Christians will agree to this, and it sets an important precedent for any later problems that may arise.

## Get Started

Ask God to guide the discussion and to teach you from His Word. Get the people started doing the study. There should be a sense of expectancy in the group. Enthusiasm can often be developed as the people actually do a little of the study. Without leaving their seats, ask them to quietly start working on the first part of their study. This should probably take five to ten minutes.

Then ask the group to share what they have discovered from this little glimpse into God's Word. There probably won't be time to discuss these observations extensively. Instead, work at creating curiosity and anticipation for the rest of the study.

Be sure not to disparage the responses from the group at this first meeting—especially as they share what they have learned from the Bible study time. Instead, work at giving sincere compliments. People are encouraged by praise.

As you complete the time of sharing, close in prayer. If you have budgeted your time carefully, you should not be running late. Each of the four steps should take about one fourth of the time.

As you adjourn, remind everyone of the time and place of the next meeting and their assignment.

## NOTES



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **BIBLE STUDY: CHARACTER IN ACTION**

A Christian is not immune to the experience of suffering. Sickness, sorrow, death, disappointment, and pain are experienced by all men. But for a Christian, suffering carries with it the promise of God's sovereign purpose in shaping the inner qualities of life.

VERSES Pg. 734

### **God's Ultimate Control**

1. What do the following verses teach about God's perspective and purpose?

Isaiah 45:5-7 \_\_\_\_\_

Isaiah 46:9,10 \_\_\_\_\_

2. What did Joseph say about the difficult circumstances and troublesome people he faced?

Genesis 50:20 \_\_\_\_\_

3. Read Romans 8:28.

a. What was Paul's conclusion? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. To whom was this promise made? \_\_\_\_\_

4. Can you describe an experience in your life which at the time did not seem to be producing anything good, yet later proved to be beneficial?

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

### **The Purpose of Suffering**

5. Read Isaiah 52:13-53:12, which describes the Messiah as God's suffering servant.

a. In what ways did Christ suffer unjustly? Isaiah 53:3-5 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How did He respond to this suffering? Verse 7 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. For whose sake did He endure this suffering? Verses 8, 10-12 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

d. How does Christ's suffering relate to you? 1 Peter 2:21 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

6. What are some of the reasons God tested the children of Israel?

Deuteronomy 8:2 \_\_\_\_\_

Deuteronomy 8:3 \_\_\_\_\_

Deuteronomy 8:16 \_\_\_\_\_

7. What are some further purposes of suffering?

John 15:2 \_\_\_\_\_

Hebrews 12:6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Peter 1:6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

8. Why should we not be surprised to suffer for Christ? 1 Peter 4:12,13 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

9. Reflect on Jesus' words in John 15:18-21.

a. What does this reveal about the world's attitude toward God? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. Why can we expect this response? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

## **Your Response to Suffering**

10. Read Luke 6:22-23

a. What type of suffering can we expect? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. How should we respond? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

11. Examine James 1:2-4.

a. What should be our attitude as we experience various trials? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. Why can we have this attitude? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

12. Read Ephesians 5:20 and 1 Thessalonians 5:18.

a. How does God want us to respond to every situation? \_\_\_\_\_

b. Why is this response important? \_\_\_\_\_

13. Is there any circumstance in your life for which you have not been able to thank God from the heart? Check one answer below:

☐ **Yes**

☐ **No**

b. What is it? \_\_\_\_\_

c. What keeps you from thanking God for it? \_\_\_\_\_

d. What action could you take to resolve this conflict? \_\_\_\_\_

14. Read Philippians 1:12-21.

a. How did Paul suffer? \_\_\_\_\_

b. What was his attitude? \_\_\_\_\_

c. What were the results of his suffering? \_\_\_\_\_

15. What attitudes toward suffering were shown by the following men?

**Job**—Job 1:20-22 \_\_\_\_\_

**The Apostles**—Acts 5:40,41 \_\_\_\_\_

**Stephen**—Acts 7:59,60 \_\_\_\_\_

**Paul**—Romans 8:18 \_\_\_\_\_

*A man's response to problems determines his maturity level. Each crisis is an opportunity for victory or defeat.*



16. What wrong responses could be demonstrated in the midst of suffering? Why are they wrong?

Psalm 106:13-15 \_\_\_\_\_

Romans 12:17-19 \_\_\_\_\_

Hebrews 12:15 \_\_\_\_\_

## **The Results of Suffering**

17. Read Romans 5:3-5. What are some possible results of suffering? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

18. What can God's loving discipline produce in you? Hebrews 12:10,11 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

19. Read 2 Corinthians 1:3,4.

a. What does this passage tell you about the benefits of suffering? \_\_\_\_\_

b. Name a person you know who is presently going through a difficult time. \_\_\_\_\_

c. What can you do to encourage this person? \_\_\_\_\_

20. Read Psalm 119:67,71.

a. What can afflictions produce in you? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How do you think this happens? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

21. Psalm 78 recounts God's dealings with the nation of Israel. Often God did things for the benefit of His people which they failed to see from His perspective. Rather, they saw them from their own short-range point of view. From verses 11-18, list several ways God acted for the good of His children.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

When God wants to drill a man  
And thrill a man  
And skill a man;  
When God wants to mold a man  
To play the noblest part;  
When He yearns with all His heart  
To create so great and bold a man  
That all the world shall be amazed—  
Watch His methods, watch His ways!  
How He ruthlessly perfects  
Whom He royally elects!  
How He hammers him and hurts him,  
And with mighty blows converts him  
Into trial shapes of clay which  
Only God understands,  
While his tortured heart is crying  
And he lifts beseeching hands!  
How He bends but never breaks  
When His good He undertakes;  
How He uses whom He chooses  
And with every purpose fuses him,  
By every act induces him  
To try His splendor out—  
God knows what He's about!

—J. Oswald Sanders  
(From *Spiritual Leadership*, page 141)



## Remember These Points

Add a sentence or two to the following statements to summarize the most important points you learned from each section in this chapter.

### God's Ultimate Control

God is in control of the circumstances surrounding us. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

---

### The Purpose of Suffering

We should expect to suffer, and should learn something from trials. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

### Your Response to Suffering

God wants us to display joy and thanksgiving in all situations. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

### The Results of Suffering

Suffering produces good qualities in our lives. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

---

---

---



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Prior-ity	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## **Chapter 3**

# **THE COST OF DISCIPLESHIP**

Several months ago, a businessman and I were having lunch together. During the meal, I asked him what was uppermost in his thinking. He replied that he was in the process of reevaluating the cost/results ratio in his corporation. The concept was simple. To stay in business, he had to make sure that the cost of manufacturing his product was not greater than the price for which he could sell it.

Even I could understand the importance of a cost/results ratio. If it cost me \$5 to make a product, and I sold it for \$4.50, I would soon be out of business. As I mused over this concept, I thought how much the benefits of being a Christian exceed the cost. In fact, discipleship has been designed by God with our best interest at heart. It was not designed to “help God out,” but rather to “*help us out.*”

God does not need our help. It is we who need God’s. Discipleship was designed by God in order to give us the help we need.

One spring a family of five was driving through Georgia in a Volkswagon. It was late at night and raining so heavily they could hardly see 100 feet down the road. As they were inching their way along, they noticed a man and woman walking along the highway in the pouring rain. They pulled over, asked if they could help, and noticed that the woman carried a baby in her arm.

She said they lived in a town several miles back but the electrical storm had caused a short in the wiring of their house, starting a fire that burned it to the ground. They had barely escaped with their lives and were walking to the next town some seven miles away to stay with

her sister and family until further provision could be made. Feeling sorry for the destitute family and realizing there was no room for them in the VW, the man reached into his wallet, pulled out \$20, gave it to the woman and drove off into the night.

A couple of miles down the highway, he stopped and asked his family, “How much money do you have?” Their pooled resources came to a little under \$100. He drove back to where the couple was still walking. “Do you have the money I gave you?” he asked.

Quite surprised, the woman said, “Yes, we do.”

“Then give it to me.”

Perplexed, she reached into her pocket, pulled out the \$20, and handed it to him. He combined it with the money he had and handed it all to her saying, “Here, our family would like you to have this.”

When I first heard this story, I thought, What a beautiful and precise illustration of how God treats us. Our Lord gives us so many wonderful gifts, and then He comes to us and says, “I would like to have them all back—every one of them.” He does this so He can combine them with His unlimited resources and give them all to us.

Discipleship is our opportunity to tap the infinite resources of God. It is our chance to give our lives to significance rather than mediocrity. In discipleship we are not doing God a favor, He is doing us a favor. It is vital that the disciple grasp this important concept.

However, Jesus also warns us to weigh the cost and weigh it well, for discipleship will cost us something. It will cost us our lives. But the results are infinitely greater than the cost, so much greater that one would be foolish to turn down such an offer.

Let's walk through Luke 14 together and note some principles of discipleship as Jesus brings this great concept into focus.

**Verse 1:** "And it came to pass, as He went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched Him." Wherever Jesus went, the eyes of people were upon Him. He claimed to be the Author of a brand new way of life. He said, "I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly" (John 10:10). And because of His claim to uniqueness, people watched His every move to see if He was genuine.

What was true for the Savior in this respect is true for all godly people. The Christian or "Christ-one" is an ambassador of Jesus Christ. As His disciples, we claim to be in touch with reality; and consequently, the world watches us also.

Our Lord always lived by principle, never by circumstance. As His disciples, how do we live? By circumstance or by principle?

Your car is old; things are wearing out and are starting to give you trouble. The time has come for you to trade it in. So you make that familiar trek to the dealer. The salesman looks you in the eye, "Is there anything wrong with it?" You now have the choice to live by principle or by circumstance. Do you tell him the truth or a lie? The disciple is one who in every area of his life determines from the Bible what is right and lives it consistently, rather than allowing circumstances to shape his conduct.

**Verse 2:** "And, behold, there was a certain man before Him which had the dropsy." Jesus was constantly in touch with the needy. They were always "before Him." Seldom, if ever, in our

Lord's ministry did a person come for help and get turned down. Jesus seemed to deny the Syrophoenician woman, but even then He ultimately met her need.

Another great principle of discipleship comes into focus for us. The disciple is one who is in constant touch with people in need. As Jesus' disciple, are you constantly meeting other people's needs?

**Verses 8-10:** "When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honorable man than thou be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, 'Give this man place'; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, 'Friend, go up higher'; then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee."

Jesus is in the house of one of the chief Pharisees. It is time to eat, and people begin to elbow their way to the best seats around the table. Observing this, He uses the situation to teach a principle.

When you come to the table, don't take the seat of honor. For when the host comes in with the guest of honor, he will have to ask you to move. The host will feel embarrassed because he has to move you; the guest of honor will feel embarrassed because he has to take your place; all the other guests will be embarrassed because they have to witness all this; and you will be embarrassed because you are the one moved.

Rather, says Jesus, when you come to the table, find the lowest seat and sit there. Then when the host comes in and realizes that you, the guest of honor, are sitting in the lowest seat, he will move you to the seat of honor. As he moves you, he will think, My, what a humble man he is. And as you move from the lowest to the best seat, you will be honored before everyone. How pleasant! Jesus is providing instruction that will result in your feeling good rather than bad.

An important lesson for the disciple emerges from these three verses; namely, that the commandments of God are never whimsical or arbitrary but are designed for our best. God is not in heaven thinking, I wonder how I can make life miserable for these creatures of Mine. Instead, He is thinking, What are some guidelines I can give my children to teach them how to live life to the fullest. God's laws and commandments are designed to help us, not hinder us. They are meant to make us happy and fulfilled. They were written to keep us out of trouble. If the disciple could learn this one lesson, many of life's problems would be resolved.

**Verse 11:** "For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

Just as football has its double reverse, so also does God. It is in the form of a simple truth: our appetites and innate desires are not wrong in themselves but are God-created. They become wrong when we seek to satisfy or fulfill them in any unscriptural way.

For example, there is nothing wrong with wanting to be exalted or to be first or to live or to be free or to be a leader—or any of a dozen other drives or appetites. What Jesus is saying is that they must be satisfied in His way. The key to being first is being last. The key to living is dying. The key to being free is being Christ's slave. The key to getting is giving. The key to being exalted is to live a life characterized by humility.

Everybody wants to live, but nobody wants to die. Everybody wants to be free but nobody wants to be a slave. Everybody wants to get, but nobody wants to give. And this is precisely where we run into conflict with God.

He created the world, He made us, He made life, He made the rules by which we ought to live our lives. So often we want the results that God promises, but we don't want to pay the price. And in our scheming little minds, we think, "Surely it must be possible to get without giv-

ing, to be first without really being last, to live without really dying." And so we endeavor to shortcut God's rules for the game of life. But the Bible teaches us that when we shortcut the rules we short circuit the system. In no way can a person get without giving or truly live without dying. The disciple is one who has learned this great truth and is living his life accordingly.

**Verses 15-24:** And when one of them that sat at meat with Him heard these things, he said unto Him, 'Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.'

Then said He unto him, "A certain man made a great supper, and bade many; and sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, 'Come, for all things are now ready.' And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, 'I have bought a piece of ground, and I must go and see it. I pray thee have me excused.' And another said, 'I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.'"

"So that servant came, and showed his Lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, 'Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.' And the servant said, 'Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.' And the Lord said unto the servant, "Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper."

As Jesus is eating with the chief Pharisee and his guests, one of the people in a burst of enthusiasm says, "Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the Kingdom of God!" Jesus then proceeds to tell the parable of the Great Supper. The parable obviously refers to the kingdom of heaven and to that great feast with God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Why would anyone reject an invitation to dine at God's table? Only if they did not know who was extending the invitation. As Paul says, "None of the princes of this world knew: for had they

known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory" (1 Cor. 2:8). The Romans and the religious leaders of the Jews crucified Jesus Christ because they did not know who He was. People today refuse God because they are not aware of who is extending the invitation.

The parable of the Great Supper reveals that a preoccupation with the insignificant makes it impossible to bring priorities into perspective.

Possibly if our Lord Jesus were to tell the parable today, He would talk about building a dream house instead of buying a piece of ground. Instead of five yoke of oxen, He would refer to a business venture or playing the stock market. His marriage example would remain the same, for marriage through the centuries has never changed.

Becoming a Christian is free of charge. It costs the believer absolutely nothing. "For by grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast" (Eph. 2:8-9). But there is a cost attached to becoming a disciple. The cost is to become involved in God's "things" rather than our own. How easy it is for the Christian to become preoccupied with his dreams, his aspirations, his own little deal, and miss God's perfect plan for his life.

Rarely does the Spirit of God shout at a person. His voice usually comes in the form of an inner prodding (as the believer reads the Scriptures). The disciple is one who is in tune with the voice of the Spirit of God.

**Verse 25:** "And there went great multitudes with Him." It has always been in vogue to speak a good word for Jesus. The politician is assured of extra votes if he can work a quote or two from the Bible into his orations. Gandhi, though a staunch Hindu, was an admirer of Jesus Christ. Yes, the multitudes have always followed Jesus. But note who it is that hears Jesus Christ. "Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear Him" (Luke 15:1). The multitudes followed Him; the publicans and sinners heard Him.

This is the way it has always been, and it is the way it will probably always be. Christianity is a religion of rescue. It is designed for the desperate. It is for people who have a craving for something more than they can eke out of life by themselves. They are candidates for what Jesus has to say. They are the ones who "hear Him," who not only listen to what He says, but act on it. One of the fundamental requisites for true discipleship is a spirit of desperation that burns deep within the soul.

**Verses 26-33:** "If any man come to Me and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, he cannot be My disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after Me, cannot be My disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, saying, 'This man began to build, and was not able to finish.' Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with 10,000 to meet him that cometh against him with 20,000? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My disciple."

Now we begin to talk about the cost. It starts with a willingness to renounce all other loyalties in preference to Jesus Christ.

Numbers 14 describes the children of Israel at Kadesh-barnea about to enter the Promised Land when the twelve scouts return, bringing back an "evil report." The cost of entering the Promised Land is far too high; for alas, giants live there, the sons of Anak (see Num. 13:32-33). In a moment of terror, the people decide to turn back, with the excuse that the giants would kill their wives and children.

God never promised there would be no giants. He simply promised that He would assume

responsibility for their safe arrival in the Promised Land. But in their panic, the Hebrews hid behind their wives and children. One of the first signs of unbelief is an undue concern for family.

To be a disciple of Jesus Christ I must follow Him and do His bidding even when it appears that it will cost me my mother and my father, my wife (or husband), my children.

To drive home the impact of this cost, Jesus uses two graphic illustrations—building a tower and preparing for battle.

Verse 28 describes a man starting to build a tower but not finishing it. Have you ever started something and failed to finish it? Have you ever made a promise and failed to keep it? Have you ever vowed a vow and not fulfilled it? If so, Solomon has a word of counsel for you: “Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter anything before God; for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth. Therefore let thy words be few. When thou vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for He hath no pleasure in fools; pay that which thou hast vowed. Better is it that thou shouldest not vow, than that thou shouldest vow and not pay” (Eccl. 5:2, 4,5).

When I lived in Fort Worth I had to make frequent business trips to Dallas. As I drove along the freeway, I used to pass a large structure which appeared to be an unfinished apartment house. The skeleton was there; but for some reason, it was never completed. Month after month I drove past the structure, but there was no apparent progress on the building. Later I discovered that a man had started building, but had miscalculated the cost. He had exhausted his credit and was unable to draw any income from the apartment house. It stood as a monument to his poor planning.

Jesus used this kind of situation to emphasize the importance of carefully counting the cost of being a disciple before committing oneself. Don’t start something unless you are willing to finish it.

Note that Jesus said, “...and is not able to finish it.” The Dallas contractor was not able to finish

his building. For the disciple, however, the ability traces back to the will. The ability to be a disciple is ours through the resources of Jesus Christ (2 Peter 1:3); the only factor we need to add to the equation is that of our will.

The Lord Jesus gave a second illustration on counting the cost: a king going to war. When engaging our enemy in battle, two questions must be answered. First, can I with my resources beat him? Second, do I want to pay the price involved in beating him? If the answer to either of these questions is no, it is wiser to send an ambassador and sue for peace.

The Lord Jesus said, “Upon this rock I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it” (Matt. 16:18). Gates are for defense, not offense. Have you ever heard of a person going to battle swinging a pair of gates at the enemy? Gates are used to keep the enemy out. The disciple is called upon to do battle against the massed forces of Satan, to break down the gates of Hell and set the prisoners free in Jesus’ name. Jesus promises that when we do battle like this, the gates of Hell shall not prevail against us. But there is a cost involved in doing battle.

“If you are unwilling to pay the cost,” says the Lord, “then send your ambassador and sue for peace.” As a Christian you can go to the devil and say, “Look, Satan, I am already a Christian and I am on my way to heaven; but I want to make a deal with you. If you leave me alone, I will leave you alone. I will not be a true disciple of Jesus Christ. I will not threaten your hold over the lives of men or invade your kingdom. In return, don’t you bother me. Let me live in comfort and quiet.”

And the devil will say, “Friend, you’ve got yourself a deal.”

But remember, Satan is a liar and the father of liars. You have no guarantee that he will not double-cross you. The cost you will pay for not being a disciple is infinitely greater than the cost you pay for being one.

**Verses 34,35:** “Salt is good; but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.”

Jesus concludes His dissertation on discipleship with this strange parable of the savorless salt. For a long while I could not understand its relation to discipleship. Then one day it occurred to me that this parable is an illustration of the believer who refuses to be a disciple. It is God's design that every believer be a disciple. But when one goes back on his commitment, he becomes good for nothing. You can't save him; he is already saved. You can't use him; he is unavailable. He is like savorless salt. “Men cast it out.”

Week after week as you see him going along to church, he becomes an example of what not to be. All you can say to your “Timothy” is, “See that man? He is a believer who has refused to pay the price of becoming a disciple. In making that decision, he has relegated himself to a life of mediocrity. Given a chance to be first, he has chosen to be last. To use the words of the Lord Jesus, he is a savorless salt. Whatever you do, don't become like him.”

When Cortez landed at Vera Cruz in 1519 to begin his dramatic conquest of Mexico with a pocket-sized force of 700 men, he purposely set fire of his fleet of eleven ships. His men on the shore watched their only means of retreat sinking to the bottom of the Gulf of Mexico. With no means of retreat, there was only one direction in which to move, forward into the Mexican interior to meet whatever might come their way.

In paying the price for being Christ's disciple, you too must purposefully destroy all avenues of retreat. Resolve in your heart today that whatever the price for being His follower, you are willing to pay it. Either that, or send your ambassador and sue for peace.



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **THE BRIDGE PRESENTATION**

NOTES

### **Introduction**

The Great Commission will never be accomplished until every disciple is “fishing for men.” In this lesson we will be teaching you how to present the Gospel of Jesus Christ to another person. The tool we use is called the **Bridge** illustration. We use the Socratic form of evangelism in which people are given basic information and then asked specific questions based on the information. This has proven to be a very effective method of presenting the Gospel for a number of reasons:

- It creates a deductive dialogue.
- To answer the questions people must **reason** from the information given.
- The answer establishes the premises from which we continue to reason.
- People tell you what you wanted to tell them.
- People discover the truth on their own rather than by your giving them the answers.
- You have immediate feedback on what people do and don’t understand.
- The truth is visualized as you write the answer into the illustration.

You are asked to memorize the following sequence of questions. You need not memorize word for word as you would memorize a Bible verse. However, if you adjust the questions, make sure that the question extracts the answer you want. A sloppy question may extract the wrong answer and hinder rather than help you. Memorize the sequence of questions in bold print. The logical answers are printed in script. Both are printed together so you can see the flow of thought for the dialogue.

### **Gospel Presentation**

**A person must understand three things to become a Child of God or, in other words, a Christian. With your permission, I would like to show you from the Bible what these three things are.**

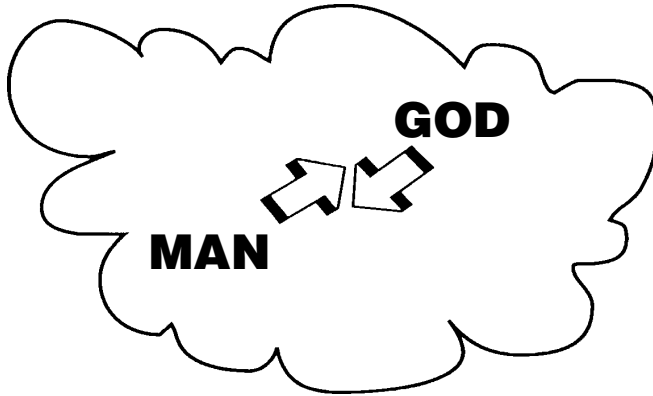


*Okay, if it doesn't take too long, I have a few minutes.*

NOTES

## **The First Thing**

The Bible records that God made Adam and Eve and placed them in the Garden of Eden with clear instructions about the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. They lived in perfect harmony with God and had fellowship with Him.



One day however, something happened in the Garden that caused a barrier to be erected between them and their Creator so that they could no longer have fellowship with Him.

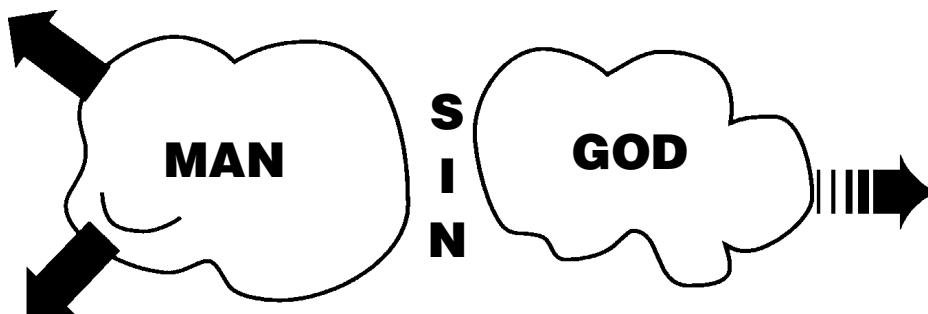
Can you tell me what that was?

*Was this when they ate the fruit and disobeyed God?*

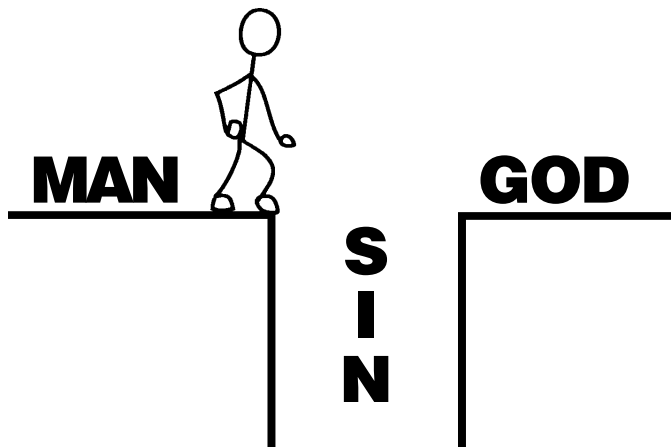
Yes, Adam and Eve chose to listen to the serpent's reasoning rather than God's command. There is a special word the Bible uses for this disobedience. Do you know what the Bible calls it?

*Was it sin?*

That's right-~~it~~ was sin.



We could illustrate this another way; we could put man standing on one side of a cliff, God on the other side and SIN in between, separating them.



The Bible talks about this in Romans 3:23.

Would you please read this passage to me?

*“For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”*

According to this passage, how many have sinned?

*It says “all.”*

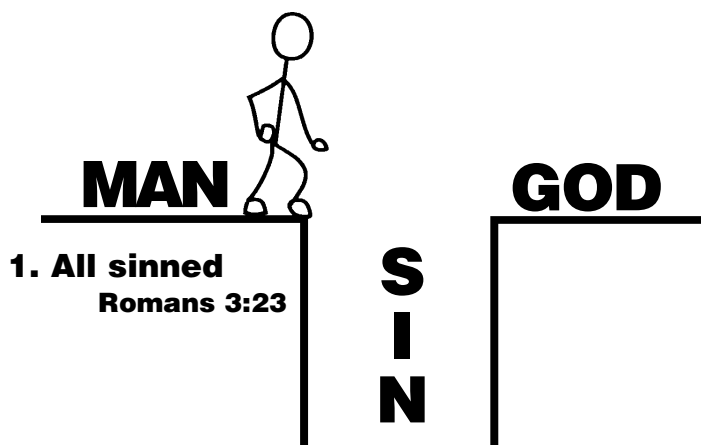
Does this mean I have sinned?

*It says “all,” so I guess that means you.*

Does it mean that you, too, have sinned?

*Yes, it means that I, too, have sinned.*

Now that’s the first thing a man must understand to become a Christian. Let’s write that down.



## The Second Thing

The second thing that a man must understand to become a Christian is found in Romans 6:23. Here the author draws a conclusion to this matter of sin.

Would you please read this passage to me?

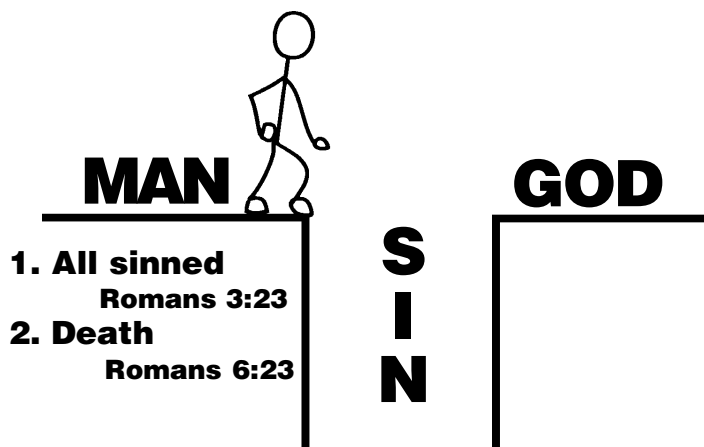
*"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

God does not expect us to labor and make this world a better place to live without paying us a wage. God fully intends to pay us a wage for all that we have ever done.

However, here God says that the wage for our sin is *what*?

*It says "death."*

This is the second thing that a man must understand to become a Christian, so let's write that down.



We could say many things about death. But if we reduce it to its simplest form, it is mere separation. Several years ago, my father-in-law died. Now he is in one place and I am in another; death has separated us. When Adam and his wife sinned, they died spiritually and were separated from God.

### **The Third Thing**

The third thing that a man must understand to become a Christian is found in Hebrews 9:27.

Would you please read this verse to me?

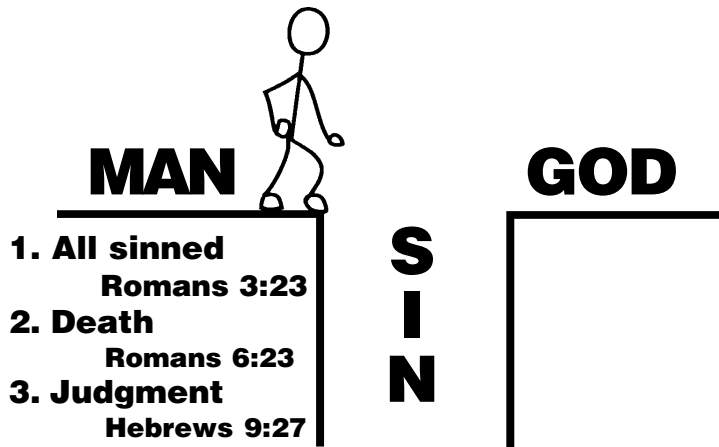
*"And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment."*

According to this verse, when a man dies he has an appointment with God, for what?

*Judgment.*

Since that is the third thing that a man must understand to become a Christian, let's write it down.

NOTES



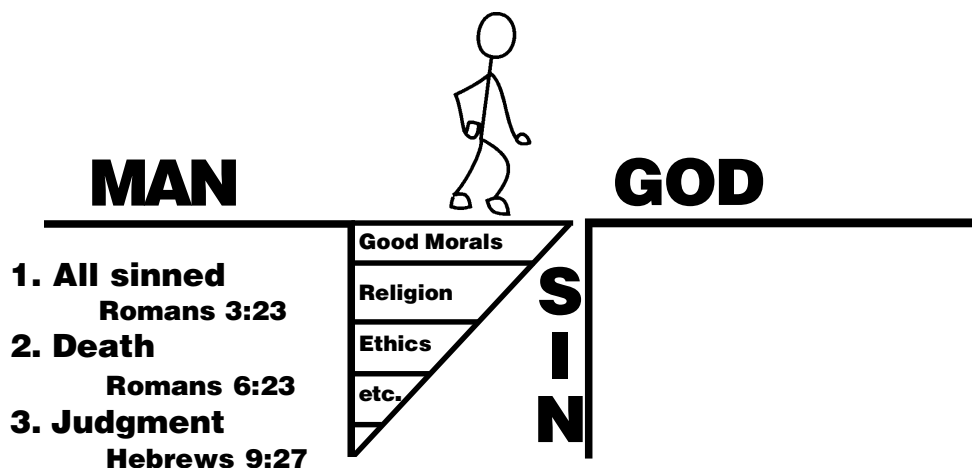
Now if it is true that all men have sinned, and that the penalty for sin is death and separation from God, and that the day is coming when man will be judged. This does not paint a very bright picture, does it?

*No, it certainly does not.*

Down through the ages, man has understood this and has tried to make his way back to God.

**What are some ways *you* think men try to make their way back to God?**

*By living a good moral life? Being religious? Helping his fellow man?*



You are right—this is how men try to make or work their way back to God. However, we learned in Romans 3:23 that all our efforts fall short of what God requires. In John 5:24, God reveals what is required. Here we learn three very interesting things that are relevant to what we have already learned.

I wonder if you would read this verse to me?

*“Most assuredly, I say to you, he who hears My word and believes in Him who sent Me **has** everlasting life, and **shall** not come into judgment, but has **passed** from death into life.”*

## NOTES

**Who’s speaking?**

*I guess it’s Jesus.*

**That’s right—Jesus says that if you will hear His Words...**

**Are these my words or Jesus’?**

Jesus’.

**And believe in Him who sent me...**

**Who sent Jesus?**

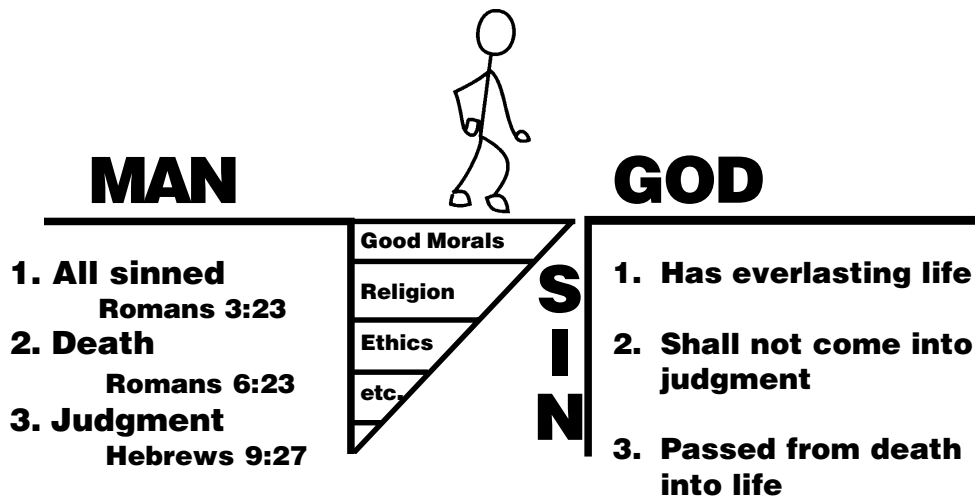
God.

**Three things would happen.**

**What are they?**

- *Has everlasting life*
- *Shall not face judgment*
- *Passed from death to life*

**So let’s write those down on the other side of the ravine.**



Notice the tenses of the verbs in each of the above phrases.

**In what tense is “has”—past, future, or present?**

*Present tense.*

**What does the present tense in this statement mean?**

*It means that right now, in the present, I can have eternal life.*

**That's right. Now in what tense is "shall not" ~~present~~, past or future?**

*Future tense.*

**So what does this phrase mean?**

*I will not be judged at some future date.*

**That's right. Now in what tense is "passed" ~~future~~, present or past?**

*Past tense.*

**And what does this phrase mean?**

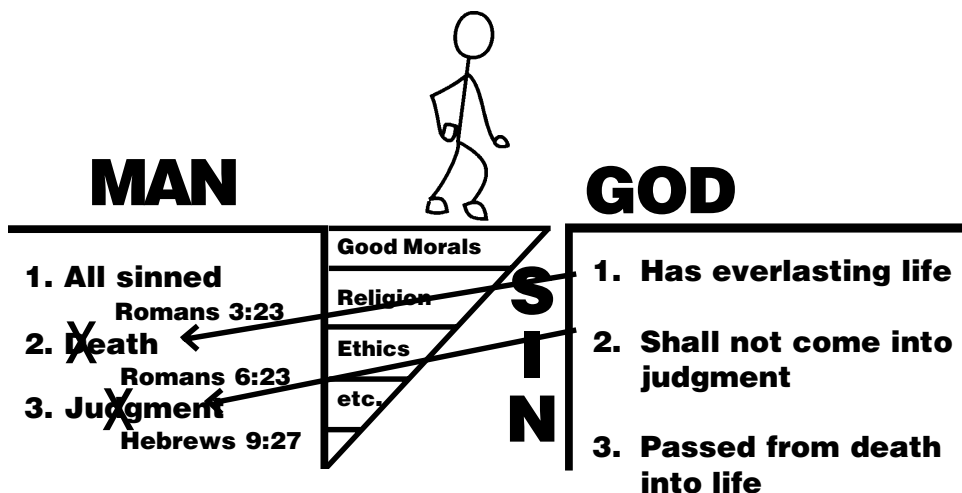
*I have already passed from death into life.*

**That's right. It is important that you understand this because if you now have everlasting life, what does that do to death?**

*It crosses out death.*

**If you shall not be judged, what does that do to judgment?**

*It cancels judgment.*



**When I hear God calling and believe, that means:**

- Intellectually I understand the facts of the Gospel;
- Emotionally I know and want to act on what I have heard;

- Volitionally I turn from man's side to God's side and place my faith in Jesus' finished work on the Cross for my sin.

NOTES

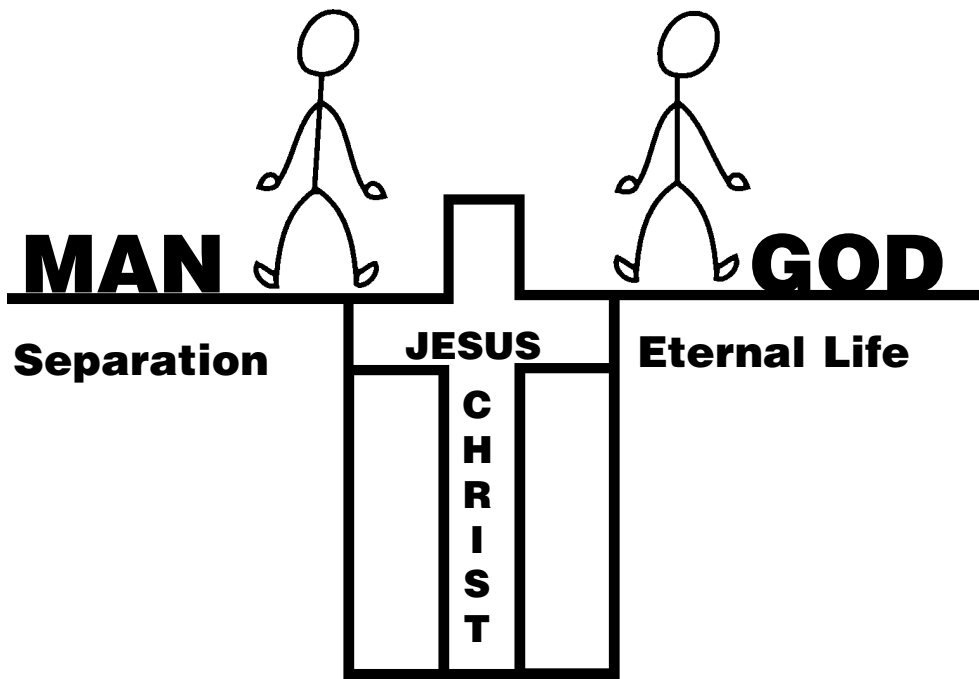
This allows me to pass over to God's side. The Bible says:

God is on one side and all the people on the other; Jesus, Himself man, is between them to bring them together, by giving His life for all mankind.

1 Timothy 2:5 (LB)

For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures...

1 Corinthians 15:3,4



If you were to place yourself into this illustration, where would you draw yourself?

*I would place myself on man's side.*

Is that where you want to be?

No.

NOTES

**Where do you want to be?**

*Over on God's side.*

**Do you know how to get there?**

*I'm not sure.*

**Let's look at John 1:12.**

**Will you read this verse to me?**

*"But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, even to those who believe in His name."*

**What must a man do to become a Child of God?**

*He must receive "Him."*

**Must receive whom?**

*Jesus Christ.*

**Do you know how to receive Him?**

*I'm not sure.*

**Let's look at another verse in Revelation 3:20.**

**Will you read this to me?**

*"Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me."*

**Who is speaking?**

*Jesus.*

**What is He doing?**

*He is knocking at the door.*

**What door?**

*The door to man's heart and life.*

**Why is He knocking?**

*Because He wants to come in.*



**The way to receive Christ is to open the door of your heart and life and let Him in. To get from man's side to God's side, all you must do when we pray is repent of your sins, and ask God to do three things:**

- **Forgive you for your sins.**
- **Come into your life and help you to become the kind of person He created you to be.**
- **Give you the gift of eternal life so that you might be with Him forever.**

**I am going to ask you to pray these three things loud enough so that when you have finished I can say a prayer to God for you. Let's pray.**

**NOTES**



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*** **Evangelism Report**

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

**I  
N  
F  
O**

Contact Name \_\_\_\_\_ Phone \_\_\_\_\_

Address \_\_\_\_\_

City \_\_\_\_\_ State \_\_\_\_\_ Zip \_\_\_\_\_

1. Describe the person to whom you presented the Bridge: \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

2. Under what circumstances was the presentation made? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

3. Did you use the opening questions? \_\_\_\_\_

☐ Set One

☐ Set Two

☐ Set Three

☐ Other

Explain: \_\_\_\_\_

Did the opening set up the Bridge Presentation for you? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

4. Did you draw out the Bridge Presentation? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

5. Did you extract the Gospel socratically? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

6. Did the person receive the Lord? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

7. What did you learn from the experience? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

8. Did you consider it a negative or positive experience? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

9. What are your plans for following through on the presentation? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/4

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Advanced Follow-Up \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Leading Bible Discussion II \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Leading Bible Discussion II</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete Who Is God? (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 4</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Pray for a convert</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>1 John 2:15,16</i>		
<i>Romans 12:2</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



## *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

# **LEADING BIBLE STUDY DISCUSSION II**

NOTES

## **The Nature of the Discussion Group**

### **What a Bible Discussion IS NOT**

- **Not a “Mama-Bird” Lecture**

Many Bible Study groups are really only the study of the leader fed in lecture fashion to the other members of the group. In such groups no one is required to prepare the study except the leader and individual interest is totally dependent upon the skill and accuracy of the leader as speaker. This is not a true Bible discussion group because nothing is discussed, only absorbed.

- **Not a “Share-Our-Ignorance” Session**

In this type of Bible sharing, no one is required to prepare. A chapter is read together and then various members of the group share whatever thoughts or impressions come to their minds. In such groups there is often no leader at all, certainly no real objective and very little profit to anyone. Since no one has given any previous thought, research or prayer to the passage in consideration, the time is spent simply “sharing our ignorance.”

- **Not a “Series of Conversations”**

Sometimes members of a Bible Study group agree to do some preparation and come to the session with some individual discoveries. However, the actual discussion is dominated by the “experts” of the group or those who are overly opinionated or talkative. Instead of a total exchange of ideas with everyone participating, only a few members talk at all. The others retreat in shyness and never contribute. This type of study discourages growth and faithfulness in preparation by all the members because it becomes apparent that only the dominant personalities will control the session.

### **What a Bible Discussion IS**

A true Bible study discussion group aims for the involvement and participation of each group member. It requires that each person prepare his lesson in advance and come to class ready to share what he has discovered. In such a group each person’s contributions is considered to be valuable and the leader will seek to draw out the findings of all the individuals.

# The Nature of the Leader

The effective discussion leader will act as a chairman and guide, not as a teacher or authority, because he realizes that the authority is the Word of God and the teacher is the Holy Spirit. The Scriptures are the sword of the Spirit. The leader's role is to guide the discussion, encouraging personal interaction according to each individual's need. This means the Bible will be the focus of attention, not the leader.

Remember that as the leader you do not have to be a walking encyclopedia with all the answers. *Leading means guiding the group in such a way that each member, including yourself, amplifies and clarifies the personal insights gained through personal study as he shares.* The key to leading is preparation. So even a young Christian can master the simple principles taught in this section on leading Bible study discussion.

A good discussion leader assists the people in the group to discover Biblical truths for themselves rather than simply giving them his answers. To do this he must learn to ask stimulating, clear questions which act as springboards to launch the discussion among the members. If the group has prepared a question-answer type study, the leader should not parrot the same question asked in the book (i.e., "What did someone get for number one?"). He must formulate new questions based upon the study, which will help the group to discover new truths and will carry them a step beyond their own personal study.

## Examining Discussion Questions

Questions are the heartbeat of any true discussion. They do a number of very useful things for both the group and the leader.

### The Importance of Questions

- *They prevent the leader from becoming a lecturer and make him a chairman or discussion leader.*
- *They force the group to think for themselves, rather than being told what to think.*
- *They help people to discover truths for themselves which aid in retention and conviction-building.*
- *They help people to evaluate what they know or understand. Often we think we know something until we are asked a question on the subject which we find ourselves at a loss to answer.*
- *They direct the flow of discussion and focus conversation on specific topics rather than allowing the discussion to drift and get off track.*

## Kinds of Questions

In Bible study discussion there are four basic kinds of questions which aid the discussion. It is interesting to note that these questions are in keeping with the four basic steps of the learning process:

- **Discovery**
- **Understanding**
- **Correlation**
- **Application**

If we follow this flow in leading the group, it will aid our understanding of the topic at hand.

### Discovery

As we study the Bible we are discovering truths in the text under consideration, which we may or may not have known before. The discovery really comes when we are dealing with truths we had not previously known, understood, correlated or applied.

### Understanding

Having discovered something leads us to the next step—determining what the discovery means. It is important that we accurately understand, as this is a building block for other truths.

### Correlation

Having understood a concept, the mind takes the next step of relating this information to what it already knows. It does this for two purposes:

- To increase understanding and develop new truth.
- *To locate the proper place to store the new information until it is needed.*

### Application

Relating the truth properly leads to the final step in learning: application or putting the new information into practice in daily life. At this point the information becomes more than mental and begins to affect behavior and lifestyle.

Since these four stages make up the normal flow of the learning process, the discussion is enhanced by following this natural pattern. We will therefore normally have four kinds of questions:

- **Discovery Questions**
- **Understanding Questions**
- **Correlation Questions**
- **Application Questions**



## **Discovery Questions**

The purpose of these questions in Bible discussion is to identify what the passage is saying. They are basically factual in nature and are the basis for all good discussion. In your discussion outline, you will need this kind of question to launch every major section of your outline.

Discovery questions will allow members to interact and share what they have discovered in the portion of text under consideration. It is often amazing to observe the way that different people in the group are able to see facts in the passage which others missed. Once the basic content of the passage is revealed, the group is ready to move to the next type of question.

## **Understanding Questions**

The purpose of this type of question is to discern what this passage means. Often a leader makes the mistake of sharing his own personal interpretation of various words or phrases in the text. It is not the leader's job to tell the group what the passage means, but to ask the kind of questions that will cause the answer to surface from the group members' responses.

A good leader will have done research into the meaning of a passage in order to guide the group in the right direction. It is important to realize that often there is more than one interpretation of a word or fact. We therefore must take care to determine the definition which the author had in mind when he wrote it. Tools which will aid the leader in this phase are a good Bible dictionary, a concordance and a Bible commentary.

Having discovered what the passage says and means, the discussion can move on to relate the new truth to what is already known through correlation questions.

## **Correlation Questions**

The purpose of these questions is to shed more light on the issue from other parts of the Word of God. Here we attempt to relate the passage we are studying to other passages and to see how various truths relate to each other. The Bible is its own best commentary on itself, and therefore understanding can be increased by seeing what light other passages can shed upon the text. The purpose of this phase is to ensure that meaning is not assigned to a text which the author did not intend and that the group's understanding of the passage is consistent with the rest of the Scripture.

## **Application Questions**

The purpose of these questions is to help group members determine how they should apply what they have learned to their own personal lives. No study is complete unless it is applied personally. The Bible was primarily given to change our lives and not to just make us more knowledgeable. Scripture bears this out.

*But be doers of the word, and not hearers only,  
deceiving yourselves.*

*James 1:22*

*I thought about my ways, And turned my feet to Your  
testimonies. I made haste, and did not delay To keep  
Your commandments.*

*Psalms 119:59,60*

The benefits of Bible study only come as we obey the voice of God and put His commands into practice in our *daily living*. Application questions should be a part of each major section of the Bible study and not just at the end.

## Writing Good Questions

A good question has three basic ingredients. It is:

- Clear
- Relevant
- Stimulating to the discussion

We need to keep the three ingredients in mind as we develop our discussion questions. The kind of question you ask determines the answer you will get. So you must design the question to give you the kind of answer you are looking for. By answering your own question you can determine whether or not it needs additional development or clarification.

- *Make sure your question is really only asking one question. Sometimes “and” or “but” can introduce a second question which leads to confusion.*
- *Make sure your question can be answered from the passage under consideration.*
- *Ask questions which are broad enough so that more than one person can speak to it.*
- *Ask summarizing questions which cover the content of several verses and allow more than one contribution from the group.*

## Discovery Questions

This type of question is used to discover what the passage says. Be careful in selecting your questions since they will determine the topic you discuss and the responses you will get from the group. It is best to ask general questions in order to stimulate discussion.

### Examples:

What did God do? (Limits the response.) What did you discover about God from his actions? (This can give a variety of members an oppor-

tunity to speak to the question. It also allows the participant to answer from several verses rather than just one.)

A good way to develop broad general questions is to take the chapter subpoints and turn them into questions.

### **Example:**

*God cares for You* (chapter subpoint): What did you discover about God's care for you in the lesson?

To evaluate each question, ask yourself if it is:

### **Clear?**

- Does it extract facts rather than feelings or opinions?
- *Will people know what you were asking so they can answer?*

### **Relevant?**

- Does it deal with the key issues?
- *Could it be answered by two or more truths in the text?*

### **Stimulating?**

- Will it stimulate discussion?
- *Can more than one person speak to the question?*

## **Understanding Questions**

These questions are used to discover what the passage means and should help the people to go beyond their original discovery of the facts and to learn what the author meant. You can best develop your questions by determining what words and phrases in the passage may not be clear or easily understood.

In a discussion, people will often ask, "What does this mean"? They themselves may be asking one of your understanding questions. Allow the other group members to answer if they can. If the question is relevant and if no one in the group knows the answer including you—suggest that everyone do some research on the question and that you deal with it next week.

Remember, no one knows the answer to every question, and as a discussion group leader you are not setting yourself up as an expert—just the chairman.

This kind of question should be included in the understanding phase.

### **Examples:**

- “What is meant by the word \_\_\_\_\_?”
- “What does it mean that \_\_\_\_\_?”
- “What does \_\_\_\_\_ mean?”

To evaluate each question ask yourself if it is:

### **Clear?**

- *Does the question clarify the issue?*
- *Does the question raise unnecessary problems?*

### **Relevant?**

- *Will the answer reveal what the author meant?*
- *Does the question focus on the key issue?*

### **Stimulating?**

- *Will the question help their personal understanding?*
- *Do the members have the knowledge to answer the question?*

## **Correlation Questions**

The purpose of these questions is to help members identify the relationship between certain truths and passages. We are seeking to highlight a truth in the passage under consideration and to relate it to what the rest of the Bible teaches about it. We are trying to draw this particular truth into the integrated whole of the Scriptures.

### **Examples:**

“How does this passage relate to \_\_\_\_\_?”

“Do you know any other passages that speak to this issue?”

“Where else is this word or expression found in the Scriptures?”

If most of the group members are unfamiliar with the Bible, the leader can help them to find pertinent cross references by asking the entire group to turn to another passage dealing with the same truth. The leader can ask someone to read the passage and can then ask the group:

“How do you feel that this passage relates to the passage in our study? What new light does it shed?”

Such structured correlation questions can help a group of young Christians to see how the Bible fits together and will stimulate their own personal search for related passages and cross references.

To evaluate each question, ask yourself if it is:

### **Clear?**

- *Does it ask how this passage is related to other Scriptures?*
- *Does the group have enough knowledge and maturity to know other related passages or do they need help?*

### **Relevant?**

- *Does it relate to the truths the group has discovered?*
- *Does it help people to see relationships that exist between passages and truths?*

**Stimulating?**

- *Does it help people draw from what they already know to answer the question?*
- *Does it stimulate the interest of the group to search for further related passages on their own later?*

**Application Questions**

The purpose of these questions is to encourage people to apply the truth of Scripture to their individual lives. God blesses the doers and not the hearers or knowers of His Word. This is where theology is turned into reality.

**Examples:**

“How can we apply this truth to our daily living?”

“How or why does God want his children to apply this truth?”

“What application did you make to this passage?”

To evaluate each question, ask yourself if it is:

**Clear?**

- *Does it extract what should be done about this passage?*
- *Is the expected response clear enough to be acted upon?*

**Relevant?**

- *Is it practical and obtainable by the individual?*
- *Is it built on a solid understanding of the passage?*

**Stimulating?**

- *Will it encourage people to respond?*
- *Does it call for personal action now?*

**Summary**

Ask God to help you and to give you wisdom as you prepare your questions. Failure to ask questions, to listen to answers, or to help the group understand the content of their study may cool desire to learn more from the Scriptures. As you allow them to dig into the Word for themselves and share their discoveries with others, they will become excited and desire to continue.



## ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

# **BIBLE STUDY: WHO IS GOD?**

By himself man can never bridge the unknown to discover God. We could never know Him unless God revealed Himself. Has God revealed Himself? The Bible says “yes!” From cover to cover, the Scriptures abound with insights into His character.

**VERSES Pg. 747**

## **What is God Like?**

1. What are some of God’s names recorded in Scripture?

Genesis 17:1 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalms 95:6 \_\_\_\_\_

Luke 11:2 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Timothy 6:15 \_\_\_\_\_

2. Read Isaiah 45:18-24. List several truths about God that can be discovered from this passage.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

3. What else can you discover about God?

Isaiah 40:28 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

John 4:24 \_\_\_\_\_

4. From the references below, select one for each of the following attributes of God. Briefly summarize each verse in the space provided.

Psalms 90:2

Jeremiah 23:24

1 John 3:20

Jeremiah 32:17

James 1:17

a. God is all-powerful (omnipotent) \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. God is all-knowing (omniscient) \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. God is everywhere (omnipresent) \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

d. God is eternal \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

e. God never changes (immutable) \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

5. What facts about God are mentioned in David's prayer in 1 Chronicles 29:10-13? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Rewrite these verses in your own words as a personal prayer, using it to praise God for who He is and what He is like. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

*Without doubt the mightiest thought the mind  
can entertain is the thought of God.*  
—A.W. Tozer\*

6. Man's character should reflect the fact that he was created in the image of God. For each of the following verses, list one aspect of God's nature and tell how this should be reflected in your life.

	Aspect of God Revealed	Reflected in My Life
Deuteronomy 7:9		
Psalms 119:137		
Psalms 130:3,4		
1 Peter 1:15,16		
1 John 1:5		
1 John 4:16		

\*From *The Knowledge of the Holy* (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1961), page 10.

7. Every problem we have is related to a wrong concept of God. Failure to understand what God is like leads to many conflicts. For example, if you do not believe God is forgiving, you may be continually weighed down with guilt. Choose several truths about God listed in question 6 and explain what problems might occur if you are unaware of these aspects of God's nature.

---

---

---

---

---

8. One of the most comforting truths in Scripture is the sovereignty of God—He is in control of everything. How do the following verses affirm the sovereignty of God?

Proverbs 21:1 \_\_\_\_\_

Isaiah 14:27 \_\_\_\_\_

Acts 4:26-28 \_\_\_\_\_

*The Bible states that God is not only a Spirit and a Person, but God is a  
Holy and Righteous Being. From Genesis to Revelation,  
God reveals Himself as a Holy ...and Perfect God...  
It is in God's holiness that we find the reason for the death of Christ.  
His holiness demanded the most exacting penalty for sin,  
and His love provided Jesus Christ to pay this  
penalty and provide man with salvation.  
—Billy Graham\**

## What Does God Do?

9. What are some of the things God is doing in the world today?

2 Chronicles 16:9 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalms 75:6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

Acts 14:17 \_\_\_\_\_

\* From *Peace with God* (New York: Doubleday, 1953), pages 39-40.



10. Each of the following verses outlines a different way in which God has revealed Himself to men. Match the verses with the correct statement.

- |                           |                   |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| ____ Through the prophets | a. Psalm 40:7     |
| ____ In Christ            | b. Romans 1:19,20 |
| ____ In creation          | c. Romans 2:15    |
| ____ In man's conscience  | d. Hebrews 1:1    |
| ____ In the Bible         | e. Hebrews 1:2    |

11. Examine Jeremiah 31:3, Ephesians 3:19, and John 3:16.

a. Summarize what these verses teach about God's love. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. Why do you think it is important to know and experience God's love? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

12. Read Psalm 46:1

a. How is the Lord described? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. Give a personal example of how you have experienced this aspect of God in your life. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## What Does God Expect From You?

*The most important thought I ever had was that  
of my individual responsibility to God.*  
—Daniel Webster

13. What does Psalm 46:10 teach about knowing God? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

14. What does God desire? Psalm 51:16,17 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

15. How should you respond to God? Psalm 95:6 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

16. Using the following references, write a short paragraph explaining some of the essentials in knowing God. Deuteronomy 10:12; Psalm 100:4; Hebrews 11:6

---

---

---

---

In all his dealings with us, God is at work for our good; In prosperity He tests our gratitude; in mediocrity, our contentment; in misfortune, our submission; in darkness, and at all times, our obedience and trust in Him.

17. What was David's counsel to his son? 1 Chronicles 28:9 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

18. From your study of this chapter, write a brief definition of worship. \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

a. Why do you think the worship of God is vital for Christian living? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

b. In what practical ways can you improve your worship of God? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

---

## Remember These Points:

Review the chapter subtopics and use them as an outline to write your own summary of the chapter below.

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---

---



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## **Chapter 4**

# **A PROPER VIEW OF GOD AND MAN**

Every problem a person has is related to his concept of God. If you have a big God, you have small problems. If you have a small God, you have big problems. It is as simple as that. When your God is big, then every seeming problem becomes an opportunity. When your God is small, every problem becomes an obstacle.

Every disciple should have a clear understanding of:

- (1) who God is, and
- (2) who he is.

You will never have a proper understanding of who God is until you understand yourself. The converse, however, is also true. You will never have a true understanding of yourself until you understand who God is. These two ideas are mutually dependent. The two questions of who God is and who we are find answers in Isaiah 40-66. Let's consider some passages.

### **THE NATURE AND CHARACTER OF GOD**

Isaiah 40:3-5: "The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, 'Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain; and the glory of the Lord shall be revealed and all flesh shall see it together, for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.'"

The Bible teaches that God is a glorious, self-manifesting God. The whole purpose of the devotional life is to see His majesty and become

absorbed with His glory. We read in verse 4 that God has removed every obstacle standing in the way of our fellowshiping with Him. We see, then, that the Lord is the initiator of the relationship. For us to know God is His idea, not ours. Christianity is unique among the religions of the world in that it consists not of man seeking God, but God seeking men.

**Isaiah 40:10,11:** "Behold, the Lord God will come with strong hand, and His arm shall rule for Him; behold, His reward is with Him, and His work before Him. He shall feed His flock like a shepherd; He shall gather the lambs with His arm, and carry them in His bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young."

Notice the delicate balance between God's strength and power on the one hand, and His extreme gentleness on the other. Our God is a powerful God, for by Him were all things created (see Isaiah 40:26, 28). The psalmist says, "By the word of the Lord were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth" (Ps. 33:6). Science has taught us that energy is the substance from which matter is made. God created the universe by the sheer power of His Word. His Word is creative energy.

The illustration in Isaiah 40:11 is that of a shepherd tending his flock. It teaches us that the Lord will do two things—feed us and lead us. He has made all of our needs His responsibility. So also is the burden for giving us His direction.

**Isaiah 40:13,14:** "Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being His counselor hath taught Him? With whom took He counsel, and who instructed Him, and taught Him in the path of

judgment, and taught Him knowledge, and showed to Him the way of understanding?”

These questions are rhetorical, the answer obviously being no one. Why is it that no one has ever been a counselor to God? Or that no one has ever shown Him the way to go? Simply stated, it is that He has never had to ask. He Himself said, “I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like Me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, ‘My counsel shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure’” (Isa. 46:9,10).

**Isaiah 40:15-17:** “Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance; behold, He taketh up the isles as a very little thing. And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a burnt offering. All nations before Him are as nothing; and they are counted to Him less than nothing, and vanity.”

This puts the world in its proper perspective. It is easy to look at the wrong things and become discouraged—the decadence of the human race, our own propensity for evil, our inability to control ourselves, the fact that our increased technology has often only added to our problems—all of these are enough to make many people cynical and bitter. If it is not war, then it is crime. If it is not crime, then it is scandal. If it is not scandal, then it is natural disasters. Something is always wrong.

World powers do not shape the destinies of men; neither do the economic, political, or philosophical leaders of the world. God says the mightiest of nations is less than a drop in the bucket, and as insignificant as a tiny speck of dust on a balance. He is in control!

**Isaiah 40:28:** “Hast thou not known? Hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the Lord, the creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? There is no searching of His understanding.” The Lord God never grows tired, never runs out of ideas, never is at a loss as to what to do or where to go.

He is in perfect and absolute control. He never makes mistakes. If we would believe this, a lot of our problems in life would be solved.

There are only two persons who can hurt you—you and God. Satan cannot hurt you. This fact comes through clearly in the Book of Job. We read of the conversation between Satan and God (see Job 1) in which Satan says that he cannot touch Job because God has built a “hedge” around him. This is true for every believer. The devil cannot touch him except by divine permission.

The wonderful message of the Bible is that God has our best interests at heart. He does not want to hurt us. He thinks only good thoughts about us. He desires the very best for each one of us. So, God has restricted Himself in that He cannot hurt us because of the promises He has made to us.

This, therefore, narrows the field. The only person who can ruin your life is you—no one else. Certainly other people cannot hurt you except with divine permission. If this were not so, it would mean that God is not in control of the destinies of His people. We would then have the ridiculous situation of picturing God wringing His hands in heaven saying, “I sure hope that My servant does not get hit by an automobile or killed in a plane crash.”

No one can touch your life but you, and the Bible does teach that it is possible for a person to ruin himself. You are your own worst enemy. But if you are walking by faith and in obedience, and God is who He says He is, then no one else can ruin your life; no one else can make you miss the perfect will of God.

**Isaiah 42:1-4:** “Behold My Servant, whom I uphold; Mine Elect, in whom My soul delighteth; I have put My Spirit upon Him; He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry nor lift up, nor cause His voice to be heard in the street. A bruised reed shall He not break, and the smoking flax shall He not quench. He shall bring forth judgment unto truth. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till He have set judg-

ment in the earth; and the isles shall wait for His law.”

This passage is a prophecy relating to Jesus Christ. Jesus said that judgment belongs to Him (see John 5:22,23). The judgment He exercises is according to truth, and it is absolutely consistent with Himself. We have already seen that He never becomes discouraged or faint-hearted over the iniquity of the world. Our God will bring forth judgment and equality to this planet called Earth.

**Isaiah 42:8:** “I am the Lord; that is My name; and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images.” The Lord reminds us again and again that He will share His glory with no one. Paul made the same point when he wrote that there are not very many wise and noble people in the kingdom of God (see 1 Cor. 1:26-29). Instead, God gives wisdom to the base and the despised when it is to be used for God’s glory.

The Jewish religious leaders called Peter and John unlearned and ignorant men (see Acts 4:13), and yet these unlearned, ignorant fishermen wrote seven of the New Testament books. These seven books are so profound that, through the centuries, great minds have not been able to fathom their depths.

**Isaiah 43:11-13:** “I, even I, am the Lord; and beside Me there is no saviour. I have declared, and have saved, and I have showed, when there was no strange god among you; therefore ye are My witnesses, saith the Lord, that I am God. Yea, before the day was I am He; and there is none that can deliver out of My hand. I will work, and who shall let [hinder] it?”

The Bible teaches that God is man’s Saviour. He and He alone can save. Consequently, He alone is our security. What He is saying here is: “Beside Me there is no security.” Our government through its welfare programs seeks to give its citizens security. Corporations promise employees security through pension plans, medical programs, increased wages, better jobs, and stock options. We are told that man can

create his own vehicles of security. In reality, only God can save, only God can deliver, only God can redeem. Only God can give man true security.

We have hardly scratched the surface of these great closing chapters of Isaiah regarding the character and nature of God. How easy it is to see—when we are able to grasp a vision of His greatness—that all of our problems and anxieties are rather insignificant.

## **THE NATURE AND CHARACTER OF MAN**

**Isaiah 40:6,7:** “The voice said, ‘Cry.’ And he said, ‘What shall I cry?’ ‘All flesh is grass, and all the goodness thereof is as the flower of the field. The grass withereth, the flower fadeth; because the Spirit of the Lord bloweth upon it; surely the people is grass.’” This is how God and the Scriptures view man—not as the great, self-sufficient maker of his own destiny but similar to the grass of the fields, here today, gone tomorrow. James, the brother of the Lord Jesus, put it this way, “For what is your life? It is even a vapor, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanishes away” (James 4:14). In order to understand man, this is where we must begin.

The brevity of life helps us realize the importance of giving ourselves to the right thing. The psalmist said: “For he seeth that wise men die, likewise the fool and the brutish person perish, and leave their wealth to others. Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names. Nevertheless man being in honor abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. Be not thou afraid when one is made rich, when the glory of his house is increased; for when he dieth he shall carry nothing away: his glory shall not descend after him” (Ps. 49:10-12, 16,17).

What was true in the day of the psalmist is true today. “They call their lands after their own names.” The states of Maryland, Louisiana, Pennsylvania, Virginia, North Carolina, all stand as a testimony to this! A man in one of the

cities of Michigan had a great deal of wealth. Boulevards, schools, and libraries are named after him because of his philanthropic contributions. Just before his death, he came to the city fathers and told them that he would give to them all of his wealth if they would be willing to name the city after him. Brevity of life causes man to cling to it and to reach out for immortality in whatever form he can find it.

**Isaiah 47:8-10:** “Therefore hear now this, thou that art given to pleasures, that dwellest carelessly, that sayest in thine heart, ‘I am, and none else beside me; I shall not sit as a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children.’ But these two things shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood; they shall come upon thee in their perfection for the multitude of thy sorceries, and for the great abundance of thine enchantments. For thou hast trusted in thy wickedness; thou hast said, ‘None seeth me.’ Thy wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee; and thou hast said in thine heart, ‘I am, and none else beside me.’” Because man strives for immortality in the wrong way, he runs contrary to the purposes of God. The subject of this passage is Babylon, but it can be readily applied to all of mankind.

In a famous passage prophesying the coming Jesus Christ, Isaiah writes, “All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way” (53:6). Again, the prophet wrote, “But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities like the wind, have taken us away” (64:6).

A proper perspective of God and man shows us that all of the evil and calamity that falls upon man is a product of his own folly and sinfulness. Conversely, all of the good that falls upon man is a product of God’s grace and mercy. The natural man takes issue with this. He, in violent disagreement, could turn this around and say that all of man’s achievements, his blessings, and his progress are attributed to his own ingenuity and greatness. However, when calamity and disaster strike, he is quick to blame God.

People who have trouble attributing all that is good to God and all that is evil and wrong to the sinfulness of man understand neither the character of God nor the character of man. Now, we must be quick to remind ourselves that circumstances often enter our lives that are a reflection of God’s perfect plan but which we, because of our lack of perspective, interpret to be evil. Take, for instance the cross of Calvary. If you and I were with the disciples on that eventful day, we, like they, would no doubt have seen the crucifixion as a tragedy. Likewise, if we had been with the women at the tomb on that Sunday morning when they found it empty, we, like they, would have concluded that a further calamity had struck, that somebody had stolen the body.

However, with the perspective of 2,000 years, we view both the cross and the empty tomb not as calamities or disasters, but as triumphs and victories. Often a seemingly adverse circumstance will strike, such as the loss of a loved one, and from our perspective it has all the marks of a tragedy. But from God’s perspective, it may very well be the unfolding of a higher and more beautiful plan.

## **GOD’S COMMITMENT TO MAN**

Much of Isaiah 40-66 is Messianic, and by and large the promises contained in these chapters are either to the Messiah or to the nation of Israel. However, the Holy Spirit promises, “The counsel of the Lord standeth for ever, the thought of His heart to all generations.” (Ps. 33:11). Just as we can see in these great chapters the nature of God and man, we can also draw some principles and promises for our own lives.

Consider the promise God makes to us in Isaiah 58:10-12: “And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday; and the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones; and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of

thee shall build the old waste places. Thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, 'The repairer of the breach,' 'The restorer of paths to dwell in.' ”

Your light will rise in obscurity. The Lord will assume responsibility for guiding you. During the dry periods in your life, the Lord will satisfy your soul. You will have the privilege of becoming the foundation of many generations. But all of this is qualified by an “if.” If you draw your soul to the hungry and afflicted. If you will devote your life to this kind of goal and objective, God will in turn prosper you beyond your wildest imagination.

This is God’s commitment to man. In His love, He saves us through the finished work of Jesus Christ and then He blesses and prospers us so that as we take on the character of Jesus Christ, we can effect a change in the lives of other people. All of this in turn spells “purpose” for the believer. This is what disciple-making is all about.

Let me urge you to look further at Isaiah 40-66. Read through these great chapters three separate times. The first time through, write down all you learn about the nature and character of God. In your second reading, write down all you learn about the nature and character of man. The third time through, write down all that you learn about God’s commitment to man. This third reading will stagger you. Having learned of His greatness and our tendency to sin, you will see how graciously He has dealt with us.





# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/5

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Advanced Follow-Up \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Leading Bible Discussion III \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Leading Bible Discussion III</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete The Authority of God's Word (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<i>Finish Questions on the Bible Study Discussion Outline</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 5</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Pray for a convert</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>1 Corinthians 15:58</i>		
<i>Hebrews 12:3</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



## *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

# LEADING BIBLE STUDY DISCUSSION III

NOTES

## Developing the Outline

### Discussion Outline

Most well-written Bible Study material has a basic outline written into it. In leading Bible discussion it is wise to use that outline as the framework for your discussion outline. The **first step** is to study the outline of the study very carefully and record it on your paper. For example see this week's Bible Study on The Authority of God's Word.

### Example:

**Title**      *The Authority of God's Word*

**Outline**    I. The Author of the Scriptures  
              II. Jesus' View of Scripture  
              III. The Reliability of Scripture  
              IV. The Sufficiency of Scripture  
              V. Applying the Bible to Your Life

### Discussion Questions

The **second step** is to do the lesson very carefully yourself thinking as you do it about various questions you might use in the discussion. Your questions have to do with:

- **Discovery**            ***What does it say?***
- **Understanding**    ***What does it mean?***
- **Correlation**        ***Where else is this taught in Scripture?***
- **Application**        ***How can I apply this to my life?***

### Discussion Objective

The **third step** is to develop an objective for the discussion. The objective is a statement which tells what you hope to accomplish in the discussion session.

**Example**

To help my disciples understand the material on the authority of God's Word and work with them so they will apply it to their lives and teach it to *their* disciples. Also teach them how to develop a set of discussion questions on this lesson.

**Discussion Introduction**

In ***step four***, you are ready to begin to write the introduction to your discussion outline. This could be a short paragraph which you would use to introduce the topic under consideration and to direct everyone's attention to the discussion. You can write your own introduction, or if there are introductory remarks in the Bible Study material, you may use those by reading them aloud to the group or by asking a group member to read them aloud.

**Example**

What would you do if obedience to the Scriptures jeopardized your possessions, your career, your family, or your life? Would you remain loyal to God? How would you decide what to do? Or have you, perhaps, decided already? In this chapter you will examine the authority of the Bible and its reliability in helping us make decisions.

**Developing the Discussion Questions**

The ***fifth step*** in planning the outline is to formulate questions for each major heading in the study. Remember, in this lesson we are using the Bible Study for this week's ETS chapter, entitled, *The Authority of God's Word*.

**First Heading: The Author of the Scriptures****Discovery**

What did you discover about the authority of the Scripture from your own study?

*(Remember in writing your discovery question you must frame the question to encompass all the verses under the heading. In this example, students may answer from any of the verses contained in questions one through three.)*

**Understanding**

What does it mean "The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His word was in my mouth"?

*(Ask a question on one of the verses that people might not know the meaning of. That is, they read the verse and know what it says, but they may not comprehend the implications of the particular truth under examination.)*

**Correlation**

Why is it important for us to understand the Scriptures were “God-breathed”?

*(Relate these truths to other parts of the Bible that would shed light on the subject. Here, we are helping students learn to allow Scripture to amplify Scripture. A good Bible discussion leader has as his objective to help students put the various pieces of their individual study together with other students’ discoveries to form a cohesive whole.)*

**Application**

How can these truths help you in trying to resolve questions and issues you are dealing with personally?

*(This question is designed to help people become “doers of the Word,” rather than “hearers only.” Application is the key to a changed life, resulting in true discipleship, which is the end objective of The Great Commission. Central to Jesus’ Commission is the factor of obedience. Many teach people to “observe”—but Jesus said we are His disciples if we “obey.” There is no obedience without application! Discovery, Understanding and Correlation are “observation steps”; Application is the “obedience step.”)*

**Second Heading: Jesus’ View of Scripture****Discovery**

What did you learn about Jesus’ view of Scripture?

**Understanding**

What does it mean when Jesus said “I have come to fulfill the Law”?

**Correlation**

What are some of the Laws Jesus fulfilled?

**Application**

How can Jesus’ example of using the Scripture help you? Give an example.

**Third Heading: The Reliability of the Scriptures****Discovery**

What did you discover about the reliability of God’s Word?

**Understanding**

What did Peter mean when he said, “We have not followed cunningly devised fables when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ...”?

**Correlation**

What event is Peter making reference to in 2 Peter 1:16-18?

**Application**

How can the Reliability of the Bible help you personally. Be specific by giving an example.

**Fourth Heading: The Sufficiency of Scripture**

Now, using the examples above, complete the Discussion Outline by writing the Discovery, Understanding, Correlation and Application questions for this heading. Use the sample form included with this lesson.

**Fifth Heading: Applying the Bible to Your Life**

As above, fill in questions on the Discussion Outline for this final Topic Heading.

**Conclusion**

The last section of the leader's Discussion Outline is the conclusion. In this section the leader summarizes the main points of the discussion and encourages students to make specific and personal applications in the coming week. During the conclusion section, time would be spent in prayer for the applications, and the next week's homework assignment should be given, so the students understand clearly what they will be doing in completing the last two sections.

**Schedule Time**

Plan how long you are going to spend on each point in your outline and add a time frame to the discussion.

**Using the Discussion Outline**

Remember that your outline is simply a guide for the discussion—a tool to help you, not a structure to imprison you. If the discussion does not follow the plan exactly or if you are unable to complete the discussion of every point on the outline, don't worry. Give the Holy Spirit the freedom to teach the truths. He wants to teach even if it means spending a little longer on a particular question.

Be sure to review your lesson plan before the group meets especially the objective and chapter outline. Pray over each section and question. Then trust God to lead!

**Sample Form**

Enclosed is a sample copy of the Discussion Outline form to be used in your homework assignment. Study this carefully! Careful preparation and use of this tool can revolutionize your Bible discussion skills.



## ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

# **BIBLE STUDY: THE AUTHORITY OF GOD'S WORD**

What would you do if obedience to the Scriptures jeopardized your possessions, your career, your family, or your life? Would you remain loyal to God? How would you decide what to do? Or have you, perhaps, decided already? In this chapter you will examine the authority of the Bible and its reliability in helping us make decisions.

VERSES Pg. 755

## **The Author of the Scriptures**

1. How do the writers of Scripture attribute their words to God in the following passages?

Deuteronomy 28:1,2 \_\_\_\_\_

2 Samuel 23:1-3 \_\_\_\_\_

Jeremiah 1:6-9 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 2:13 \_\_\_\_\_

2. What did Paul write about the divine authorship of Scripture? 2 Timothy 3:16 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

3. What importance does God place on his word? Psalm 138:2 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

*If it is a word from God, it has authority over men. For behind every word that anybody utters stands the person who speaks it. It is the speaker himself (his character, knowledge, and position) who determines how people regard his words. So God's word carries God's authority. It is because of Who He is that we believe what He has said.*

—JOHN R. STOTT\*

## **Jesus' View of Scripture**

4. Read the account of Jesus' temptation in Matthew 4:1-11.

a. What use of Scripture does Jesus make? Verse 10 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How much consideration did Jesus give Satan's offer before He made His decision? Verses 9,10

\_\_\_\_\_

\*From *Understanding the Bible* (London: Scripture Union, 1972), pages 183-184.



c. How did Jesus apply the verse He quoted—to Himself or to Satan? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

d. If Jesus placed Himself under the authority of Scripture, what meaning does this have for you?

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

5. How did Jesus use Scripture in the following situations?

Mark 7:6-9 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Mark 12:24-27 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Luke 10:25-28 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

6. Why did Jesus believe it was necessary to go to the cross? Luke 24:25-27 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

7. What else does Jesus say about the Scriptures?

Matthew 5:17,18 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

John 17:17 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

8. Using the material in questions 4-7, write a short paragraph explaining Jesus' view of Scripture.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

9. In what ways is Jesus' example a challenge to you? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## The Reliability of the Scriptures

10. What do the following passages say about the reliability of the word of God?

Joshua 23:14 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalms 33:4 \_\_\_\_\_

Proverbs 30:5,6 \_\_\_\_\_

11. What conclusions about the reliability of Scripture can be drawn from Luke's introductory statements of his gospel? Luke 1:1-4

\_\_\_\_\_

12. Read 2 Peter 1:15-21.

a. What affirmation does Peter make in verse 16? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. What unusual experience did Peter and others have? (Compare verses 17,18 with Matthew 17:1-9).

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. What did Peter believe was more reliable than a voice from heaven? Verse 19 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

d. Why did he think the prophecies of Scripture were so reliable? Verses 20,21 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

13. What fulfilled prophecy do you think provides the most convincing evidence of the reliability of Scripture?

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## The Sufficiency of the Scriptures

14. What is the word of God able to do in your life?

Psalms 37:31 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalms 119:130 \_\_\_\_\_

John 15:3 \_\_\_\_\_

Acts 20:32 \_\_\_\_\_

2 Timothy 3:16 \_\_\_\_\_

James 1:21 \_\_\_\_\_

15. A harvest begins with sowing. In order to reap a spiritual harvest, what did the sower sow?

Mark 4:14 \_\_\_\_\_

16. What are some ways you can be a sower during the next week? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

16. Read Isaiah 55:10,11. Notice the parallel between water and the word of God. Think through the process pictured and then record any new insights you have into the way God fulfills His word.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

17. Open your Bible to Psalm 119 and begin reading anywhere in the chapter. As you observe the benefits listed there of God's word (also referred to as His commandments, testimonies, precepts, judgments, and law), list four or five of them below.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

*The ultimate reason for the authority of Scripture lies in the authorship of Scripture. It is God's word, therefore it is authoritative. Do you desire greater faith in the Bible? Then seek a greater knowledge of God. Your concept of God and of the authority of the Scriptures will stand or fall together.*

## **Applying the Bible to Your Life**

18. What disappointed Jesus about the people of His day?

Luke 6:46 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Luke 24:25 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

19. How did King Josiah put God's word into practice? 2 Kings 23:2-4 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

20. What principles do you see in Psalm 119:59,60 that relate to applying Scripture to your life?

---

---

---

---

21. Here is a good plan to follow in taking specific steps to apply the Bible:

- *State what the Scriptures say about some area of your life.*
- *Tell what your life is like in this area.*
- *Describe what you are going to do to bring your life into conformity with God's word.*
- *Specify what practical steps you will take to check up on yourself.*

## **Now—use this plan!**

a. What Scripture passage in this chapter has touched an area of need in your life? Explain what the passage means to you.

Question number \_\_\_\_\_ Scripture reference \_\_\_\_\_

b. What improvement is needed in your life in this area? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

c. What specific steps can you take toward improvement in this area? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

d. How will you know when you have completed your application? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

Are you committed to following God and obeying His word? \_\_\_\_\_

---

## Remember These Points:

Review the chapter subtopics and use them as an outline to write your own summary of the chapter. \_\_\_\_\_

This image shows a single sheet of white paper with horizontal ruling lines. The lines are evenly spaced and run across the width of the page. There are no margins or other markings on the paper.



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

## Bible Study Discussion Outline

**Lesson** The Authority of God's Word

**Date** \_\_\_\_\_ **Sample**

### Lesson Objective

To help my disciples understand the material on the authority of God's Word and work with them so they will apply it to their lives and teach it to *their* disciples. Also teach them how to develop a set of discussion questions on this lesson.

<b>Time</b>  3	<b>Introduction</b> What would you do if obedience to the Scriptures jeopardized your possessions, your career, your family, or your life? Would you remain loyal to God? How would you decide what to do? Or have you, perhaps, decided already? In this chapter you will examine the authority of the Bible and its reliability in helping us make decisions.																					
2	<b>Prayer</b> Have John Smith open in prayer.																					
	<table border="1"> <thead> <tr> <th>Discussion Question</th><th>Notes</th></tr> </thead> <tbody> <tr> <td> <b>Heading Topic I: The Author of Scripture</b> </td><td></td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Discovery</b> What did you discover about the authority of Scripture from your own study?         </td><td>Questions 1-3</td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Understanding</b> What does it mean, "The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His word was in my mouth..."?         </td><td>Jer. 1:6-9</td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Correlation</b> Why is it important for us to understand the Scriptures were "God-breathed"?         </td><td>2 Tim. 3:16</td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Application</b> How can these truths help you in trying to resolve questions and issues you are dealing with personally?         </td><td></td></tr> <tr> <td colspan="2"> <b>Summary</b> </td></tr> <tr> <td rowspan="6">12</td><td> <b>Heading Topic II: Jesus' View of Scripture</b> </td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Discovery</b> What did you learn about Jesus' view of Scripture?         </td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Understanding</b> What does it mean when Jesus said, "I have come to fulfill the Law?"         </td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Correlation</b> What are some of the Laws Jesus fulfilled?         </td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Application</b> How can Jesus' example of using the Scripture help you? Give an example.         </td></tr> <tr> <td> <b>Summary</b> </td></tr> </tbody> </table>	Discussion Question	Notes	<b>Heading Topic I: The Author of Scripture</b>		<b>Discovery</b> What did you discover about the authority of Scripture from your own study?	Questions 1-3	<b>Understanding</b> What does it mean, "The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His word was in my mouth..."?	Jer. 1:6-9	<b>Correlation</b> Why is it important for us to understand the Scriptures were "God-breathed"?	2 Tim. 3:16	<b>Application</b> How can these truths help you in trying to resolve questions and issues you are dealing with personally?		<b>Summary</b>		12	<b>Heading Topic II: Jesus' View of Scripture</b>	<b>Discovery</b> What did you learn about Jesus' view of Scripture?	<b>Understanding</b> What does it mean when Jesus said, "I have come to fulfill the Law?"	<b>Correlation</b> What are some of the Laws Jesus fulfilled?	<b>Application</b> How can Jesus' example of using the Scripture help you? Give an example.	<b>Summary</b>
Discussion Question	Notes																					
<b>Heading Topic I: The Author of Scripture</b>																						
<b>Discovery</b> What did you discover about the authority of Scripture from your own study?	Questions 1-3																					
<b>Understanding</b> What does it mean, "The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His word was in my mouth..."?	Jer. 1:6-9																					
<b>Correlation</b> Why is it important for us to understand the Scriptures were "God-breathed"?	2 Tim. 3:16																					
<b>Application</b> How can these truths help you in trying to resolve questions and issues you are dealing with personally?																						
<b>Summary</b>																						
12	<b>Heading Topic II: Jesus' View of Scripture</b>																					
	<b>Discovery</b> What did you learn about Jesus' view of Scripture?																					
	<b>Understanding</b> What does it mean when Jesus said, "I have come to fulfill the Law?"																					
	<b>Correlation</b> What are some of the Laws Jesus fulfilled?																					
	<b>Application</b> How can Jesus' example of using the Scripture help you? Give an example.																					
	<b>Summary</b>																					

Time	Discussion Question	Notes
12	<b>Heading Topic III: The Reliability of Scripture</b>	
	Discovery      What did you discover about the reliability of God's Word?	Questions 10-13
	Understanding      What did Peter mean when he said, "We have not followed cunningly devised fables..."?	2 Pet. 1:16-18
	Correlation      What event is Peter making reference to in 2 Peter 1:16-18?	Matt. 17:1-9 Transfiguration
	Application      How can the Reliability of the Bible help you personally? Be specific by giving an example.	
	Summary	
12	<b>Heading Topic IV: The Sufficiency of the Scriptures</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
12	<b>Heading Topic V: Applying the Bible to Your Life</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
2	<b>Conclusion</b> Summarize and review homework assignment.	
3	<b>Prayer</b> Have several persons pray over the things learned in this study.	



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				





## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## Chapter 5

# EVANGELISM AND THE DISCIPLE

Being a disciple begins with a proper relationship to Jesus Christ and having on your heart what is on His. *Making* disciples begins with evangelism. As one person put it, the objective in the Christian life is to populate heaven and depopulate hell.

In evangelism the Christian's pacesetter is none other than the Lord Jesus Himself. The fourth chapter of John provides us with a striking example of Jesus' approach to evangelism.

### PICKING THE OPPORTUNITY

**Verse 4:** "And he must needs go through Samaria." A close look at a map of Palestine in the days of our Lord Jesus reveals that the shortest and easiest route from Jerusalem to Galilee was through Samaria. This, however, was not the way most people traveled. Rather than going through Samaria, they would descend from the heights of Jerusalem to the banks of the Jordan and follow the river's gently winding path to Galilee.

The reason for this dates back to the Assyrian captivity when the ten northern tribes of Israel were displaced. A remnant of those tribes remained in the land and intermarried with other peoples, producing a nation of mixed origin—the Samaritans. For this reason, they were despised by the Jews. These Jewish "thoroughbreds" would go to any length to avoid contact with the Samaritans.

But here we find Jesus needing to go through Samaria. Why? Why did He feel that it was necessary to pass through this region of outcast people? I believe it was to show the universality of the Gospel. The message of our Lord Jesus

was not just for a chosen people, but it was designed for men and women of every tongue, tribe, and race.

Underlying all of this is an important lesson for every aspiring disciple. His objective must be to reach the lost. To do this, he must follow the Saviour's example of being the "friend of publicans and sinners." Too many evangelicals interpret "separation from the world" as meaning separation from worldly people. Evangelism begins with becoming friends with worldly people. The disciple must be faithful to the Scriptures, but he is under no obligation to be faithful to the idiosyncrasies of people who are extra-biblical in their theology.

**Verse 9:** The woman of Samaria said to Jesus, "The Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans."

What Jesus replied by His interest in her was, "I have dealings with the whole world."

Jesus arrived at Jacob's well tired and thirsty (verse 6,7). His needs were simple and easy to understand. He needed rest and refreshment. But instead of satisfying Himself, He created out of His need an opportunity to witness.

When I first discovered this truth in John 4, I was smitten in my conscience. Often I use my need as an excuse not to witness. I remember, for example, a conference on the East Coast. In the course of the weekend, I had spoken four or five times and had had personal interviews with dozens of people. I was tired, and I did not want to get involved in another conversation. On my return home, I made sure that I was one of the first people on the plane, chose a window



seat, and then quickly put my briefcase on the seat next to me in an attempt to discourage people from sitting there. I allowed my need to become an excuse not to witness.

As Jesus sat resting, He saw a Samaritan woman come to the well to draw some water. She could hardly be considered a “good opportunity.” She was a Samaritan. He was a Jew. Jews had no dealings with Samaritans. She was a woman. He was a man. Men do not counsel women. She was immoral. He was righteous. Righteous people just do not associate with the unrighteous. She was an outcast, He was a great teacher. She had lost her reputation; and He, by His association with her, would stand a good chance of losing His.

One day I was traveling in an old DC3 on one of the commuter airlines. I was already in my seat when a rather portly lady, probably in her 60s, came and sat next to me. She had given an appearance of cheerfulness and friendliness as she made her way to her seat, laughing and joking with others.

When she sat down, I struck up a conversation with her by saying, “My, you are a happy, young lady.”

She reached over, put her hand on my arm, and said, “Young man, you have no idea how miserable I really am. I have all the money I will ever need, but my husband is dead, I have no real friends and have no reason for living.”

By her outward show, there was no way I could have guessed that that woman was a prime candidate for the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Yet, there she was, opening her life to me and letting me know in her own way that she was in desperate need of what the Saviour had to offer. What appeared to be a poor opportunity to share Christ was in fact an excellent opportunity.

## **PRINCIPLES IN EVANGELISM**

There are many principles that can be derived from the ministry of our Lord in the area of

evangelism. Eight of them from John 4 should draw our attention. Possibly this will stimulate your own thinking and cause you in your Bible study to come up with still more.

### **• *Open the opportunity by asking a favor.***

“There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water. Jesus saith unto her, ‘Give Me something to drink’ ” (verse 7).

It is part of our human nature to like to have others feel obligated to us, because this makes us feel needed and important. By asking her for a drink of water, Jesus made the Samaritan woman feel needed and important. By revealing His need to her, He created a permissive atmosphere in which she could feel free to talk about her own needs.

A university student once met a beautiful coed in his biology class. Many of his buddies had tried to date her and none of them had met with success. He decided on a novel approach. His sports coat was missing a button, so he asked her if she would sew one on for him. She agreed to do this, and he insisted on returning the favor by taking her out on a date.

In making friends with people, there are many things we can do to make them feel important. On the ski slopes or on the golf course you could say to someone, “Say, I noticed you are really proficient at this. I wonder if you could spare a few moments to give me some tips on how to improve my style.” A housewife can use the same approach with her neighbor by asking to borrow a recipe or a cup of flour or some other supplies.

### **• *Tailor the approach to the person.***

“Jesus answered and said unto her, ‘If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, “Give me to drink”; thou wouldest have asked of Him, and He would have given thee living water’ ” (verse 10).

Jesus did two things here that few women can resist—He offered her a gift and aroused her curiosity.

Shortly after I was married, I purchased a cut glass bowl for my wife's birthday. I brought it home and left it in the trunk of the automobile until it was time to give it to her. That night as we were lying in bed, I mentioned that I had chosen her birthday present and so aroused her curiosity that she could not sleep until I went out to the car and got it for her.

The Lord Jesus was a master at using the right approach for the right person. He did the same thing with Nicodemus in John chapter 3. Recognizing that Nicodemus was a religious leader, Jesus' approach to him was theological: "Ye must be born again."

The great evangelist Dr. Trumble was riding along on a train next to a person who opened a flask and offered him a drink of whiskey. Dr. Trumble declined the offer. A few minutes later the man repeated the offer, and again Dr. Trumble turned him down. The third time the offer was made, the man said to Dr. Trumble, "I bet you think I am a rather evil man doing all this drinking, don't you?"

"No," said Dr. Trumble. "I was thinking what a generous man you are to keep offering me a drink." That entree was sufficient for Dr. Trumble to lead the man to Christ before the journey ended.

**• Choose the questions you want to answer and ignore the others.**

The woman of Samaria said to Jesus, "...the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans" (verse 9). Jesus chose to ignore her controversial point. The Samaritan woman again brought up a point of controversy, this time pertaining to the place where people ought to worship God (verse 20). Now she was striking at a critical issue, and Jesus chose to respond.

In evangelism, develop a feel for the important questions and major in them. Generally speaking, these are questions that deal with getting to know God. Jesus geared His conversation to answering her needs rather than getting entangled in peripheral issues.

When you talk to people about Christ, all kinds of questions come up. "If the Bible says you cannot marry your sister, who did Cain marry?" "What will God do with people who have never heard the message of salvation?"

Many times one is not quite sure how critical the issue is to the person. Is it a genuine problem with him, or is he trying to sidestep the real issues? To help determine this, you can counter with, "If you knew the answer to this question, would it make any difference in your relationship with Jesus Christ?" If his answer is no, you might suggest that the real and important questions center around getting to know God in a personal way. If, however, his answer is yes, then do all that you can to reply. If you don't know the answer, be honest, tell him that you don't, and that you will endeavor to get it for him.

**• Strike for the "open nerve" that causes the person to expose his need.**

The Samaritan woman began to argue with Jesus about His ability to draw water by Himself from Jacob's well. Jesus countered with the statement, "Go, call thy husband and come hither" (verse 16). She replied that she had no husband, and Jesus completely exposed her with the comment, "Thou hast well said, I have no husband; for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband" (verse 17).

The Gospel is the good news that God can change an individual. This Good News is based on the assumption that each person's needs can be met. In evangelism, therefore, one of the first objectives is to get the person to expose his need.

Suppose you are walking down the street and a stranger appears from nowhere, grabs hold of you and says, "You look sick. Come with me into my office, and I will operate on you and make you feel better." What do you think your response would be? I would probably flee as fast as I could.

We must be careful not to be guilty of the same approach in evangelism. It is probably not the best approach to walk up to a stranger and say something to the effect, “Do you want to be saved?” Rather, concentrate on getting to know the person. Ask probing questions— even before you begin to engage him in a conversation about Jesus Christ. Find out what his needs are, what is occupying his thinking.

A few months ago I was talking to a young coed who was returning from home to the university. In the course of our conversation, she happened to mention that she was majoring in sociology. She had her heart set on being a social worker. I asked her why she chose this career, and she said she had a desire to help people. At this point I was able to ask her what she felt were the real needs people faced. This triggered off a deep, spiritual conversation, during which I was able to share the Gospel.

• ***Tell the truth even if it hurts.***

“Ye worship ye know not what. We know what we worship, for salvation is of the Jews” (verse 22). This statement by the Lord Jesus, “salvation is of the Jews,” was the very thing that turned Samaritans off. Her initial response to such a statement would probably have been, “Well, here is another bigoted Jew who thinks He’s got all the answers.” Yet Christ’s straightforwardness here gave her confidence and trust in His character when He revealed to her that He was the Messiah.

If we hedge on things we know to be true, then we convey to our listeners a lack of trust in our own convictions.

Bible-believing Christians sometimes become embarrassed by the way God acts. To that often-asked question, “Why did God destroy whole nations in the Old Testament,” our inward response frequently is, “Oh, Lord, You’ve got Yourself into trouble again! Let’s see if I can dig You out of this one.”

As you witness, you will meet people who will look you right in the eye and ask, “Do men

really go to hell if they don’t believe in Jesus Christ?” What will you do? Will you tell them what you know to be the truth? Or will you seek to run around it and change the subject?

This does not mean that we are to be tactless or obnoxious as we talk to people about spiritual truths. Kindness, patience, and long-suffering should be the virtues that characterize our lives (2 Tim. 2:24,25). But having said this, we must be willing to tell people the truth.

• ***Agree with the person as much as possible.***

This principle brings in balance principle number 5. The Jews and Samaritans could not get together on the simplest of questions; namely where God was to be worshipped (verses 20-24). Agreeing with the woman as much as possible, Jesus said, “Well, you are partly right. The issue is not between Jerusalem and this mountain. God is a Spirit. You worship Him in spirit and in truth.”

A buddy of mine was witnessing to a friend who retorted, “I’m a Catholic and you are a Protestant,” as though that should terminate the conversation between them.

My friend said, “Well, that’s interesting. I have more in common with my Catholic friends than I do with many of my Protestant friends.” That simple statement was enough to bridge a potential argument and allow the conversation to continue.

• ***Don’t allow the conversation to get off the subject.***

This principle is seen in how the woman responded to the Lord Jesus when He revealed that the man she was living with was not her husband. She immediately tried to change the subject by getting into a theological argument over where God was to be worshipped. She tried to avoid the moral issue by asking a theological question.

This often happens when one is talking to

people about Jesus if the conversation becomes a bit too personal. Instead of facing up to the personal matters, they might counter with, “What about all those people in non-Christian countries who have never heard the message of Jesus Christ?”

In pursuing the real issue, we must lovingly point out that the question is not so much, “What about people who have not heard,” but rather, “What will you do with Jesus Christ now that you have heard?” However, if this is a genuine question that is an obstacle to the person becoming a Christian, then we must do all we can to find the answer for him (see principle 3).

- ***Be sensitive to how the Holy Spirit is working in the person’s life.***

Jesus did not push her. He engaged her in conversation and allowed her to ponder the implications of what had been said. As you read through the story, you notice that salvation became her idea, not just His. She ended up truly wanting it. He did not push it on her.

A beautiful illustration of this is found in Acts 2:36-38. Peter had just finished his great sermon at Pentecost. He gave no invitation. He did not tell his audience what to do. He merely ended with a divine claim—Jesus was the Christ. But what he said shook them; and because the Spirit of God was working in their hearts, salvation became their idea, not Peter’s. They took the initiative, asking, “Men and brethren, what shall we do?”

Peter’s reply was, “Repent and be baptized every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ.”

When you talk to people about Christ, you can often tell where they are by their changing view of who He is. This can be seen by the Samaritan woman’s response to Christ. First, she calls Him a Jew (verse 9). Next, she addresses Him as Sir (verse 11). Then she calls Him a prophet (verse 19). Finally, she confesses Him as the Christ (verse 29).

## **PASSION TO DO THE JOB**

Jesus said that His food was to do God’s will. This is what concerned Him, what was uppermost in His mind. “Jesus saith unto them [the disciples], ‘My meat is to do the will of Him that sent Me, and to finish His work. Say not ye, “There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest”? Behold, I say unto you, “Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest” (John 4:34-35). Jesus does not say here that He is exercising His gifts, or that He really loves to talk to people about their eternal destiny. He simply says that He is doing the will of God.

People shun evangelism because they say it is not their strength, it is not their gift, or they do not enjoy doing it. I can certainly empathize with that. Evangelism is engaging the enemy in what the Bible calls “spiritual warfare.” It means fighting the forces of darkness for the souls of people. Let’s face it; few people enjoy fighting.

A buddy of mine, a marine infantry officer, once confided that he loved to lead men. He enjoyed going out on bivouac and practicing maneuvers with them. He loved the thrill of the dress parade. But when he was in Vietnam engaging the enemy in combat and seeing his own men die, he realized that he hated fighting.

What is true in physical warfare is equally true in spiritual warfare. If you do not enjoy engaging people in spiritual combat, don’t feel that you stand alone. Few people enjoy it. That really is not the question, nor is the question one of whether evangelism is your gift or your strength.

The only relevant question is whether it is the will of God—and we know from the Scriptures that the will of God is for us to do the work of evangelism. ***The disciple’s ministry begins with evangelism.***



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/6

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Advanced Follow-Up \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Leading Bible Discussion IV \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Leading Bible Discussion IV</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete The Holy Spirit (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<i>Write a set of Discussion Questions</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 6</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Share Bridge</i>		
<i>Complete Evangelism Report</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Mark 10:45</i>		
<i>2 Corinthians 4:5</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



# **LEADING BIBLE STUDY DISCUSSION IV**

## **Introduction**

For the past three weeks we have been examining the art of leading Bible discussion. We have studied the importance of the Bible study group and the importance of questions in leading the discussion. We learned that Discovery, Understanding, Correlation, and Application are the four phases of discussion, and we examined ways to write stimulating questions for each phase.

In this chapter we will conclude our study of Bible discussion by dealing with:

- **The three stages of each discussion question**
- **Evaluating ourselves as leaders**
- **Evaluating our questions**
- **Evaluating the discussion group members**
- **Choosing an assistant**
- **Solutions to some common problems**

## **Three Stages of Each Discussion Question**

In the development and use of discussion questions there are three basic stages:

- **The Launching Stage**
- **The Guiding Stage**
- **The Summary Stage**

These three stages should be found in each of the four phases of the discussion (discovery, understanding, correlation, and application).



## Launching

When a ship is being launched, the anchor is pulled up and it is pushed out into the sea. This is exactly what the launching stage of each question does. It propels the group into the action of sharing their discoveries. The launching stage should be prepared in advance and written on the discussion outline.

### Example:

- What did you discover about \_\_\_\_\_?

Give the group time to think; don't be afraid of a little silence. The silence shows the group that you really do expect them to contribute and that you are only the chairperson—not the teacher. As they begin to share their thoughts and discoveries, accept their answers with real appreciation.

## Guiding

The second stage of the discussion question guides the group into total participation. Guiding questions don't have to be prepared in advance since they simply encourage other members to add their contributions to the discussion.

### Examples:

- What did someone else discover about this?
- Does someone else want to share what he found?
- Would someone else like to add to that?
- What do some of the rest of you think?

If someone in the group is especially shy or reluctant to share, you may personalize the guiding stage to him.

### Example:

- John, what can you contribute to the discoveries we are making here?

*(Don't say, "John would you like to add anything to this?" A shy person will usually say, "No," and then be quiet. Try to ask the guiding question in such a way that you force the person to at least make a complete statement.)*

By watching faces you will see who is ready to contribute to the discussion. As you lead, remain in the background but in control through your questions. After everyone or almost everyone has shared, you are ready to summarize.

## Summarizing

This is the last stage of the discussion question. You summarize by logically arranging the various points your group has contributed.

This will give you an opportunity to highlight the most significant conclusions. At the end of this stage you are ready to return to your discussion outline sheet and launch the next discussion question.

## Evaluating Ourselves as Leaders

Every person who leads a Bible discussion for the first time will feel inexperienced and somewhat apprehensive. Afterward, he may realize that everything did not go exactly the way he expected. If this happens to you, don't feel discouraged. It happens to everyone occasionally—even the most experienced leaders.

The important thing to remember is that with each study, the leader should seek to improve himself. This can only be done through prayerful and objective evaluation after each session. As the leader evaluates himself, he can determine whether or not his objectives were achieved and how he can learn from his experiences with the group.

### **Remember:**

Skill in Bible discussion comes with practice and experience. Learn from each experience you have—positive or negative.

If you have a Christian friend or pastor who is experienced in discussion leading, you may ask him to sit in on your group from time to time. His observations and comments on your leadership can be extremely helpful. However, during those sessions when there is no one to help you critique your leadership, the following checklist may prove helpful for your personal evaluation.

### **The Leader Evaluation List**

- Did all the members attend the discussion?
- Did you start and stop on time?
- Was it a discussion, conversation or a lecture?
- Did all the members participate adequately?
- Were you able to guide the discussion with your questions?
- Did your questions stimulate discussion?
- Did you launch, guide and summarize each section of the discussion?
- Did you get side-tracked or were you able to keep to the subject?

- Did anyone take over as the group leader or monopolize the discussion?
- Did you give adequate time to share written applications?
- Were the applications realistic, practical, and attainable?
- Did the discussion move along or drag?
- Did the discussion lead to further understanding of the discovered truths?
- Was there a good spirit within the group?

## Evaluate Our Questions

Good, stimulating questions are powerful tools to the discussion leader. Questions prod thinking; thinking leads to reasoning, and reasoning to understanding. As a result of understanding, convictions and conclusions are formed which can be life-changing to the individual.

The questions asked by the group leader are therefore vital and necessary for the direction and effectiveness of the discussion. Every leader should be aware of the importance of the questions he asks, and take the time necessary to prepare them well. Good questions which have been carefully prepared and tested will stimulate and deepen the discussion. Poor questions, however, may result in a dull discussion, a monologue by the leader or a digression (sometimes radical) away from the subject to be discussed.

Because discussion questions are so important a wise leader will take time to evaluate them carefully. The following checklist of five points can be helpful in such evaluation.

### To whom is the question directed?

• To oneself	Rhetorical
• To one member of the group	Direct
• To the one who asked the previous question	Reverse
• To someone, or to all, other than the previous questioner	Relay
• To the group as a whole	General

Avoid rhetorical questions; they usually kill discussion at once.

Be careful with direct and reverse questions; the person asked may have nothing relevant to say.

Normally, general and relay questions stimulate the group the most.

### **What is the underlying purpose of the question?**

- To accumulate facts
- To define, to clarify, to compare, to contrast, to develop
- To bring the group back to the subject, to change direction
- To arrive at conclusions, to summarize findings
- To involve or to stimulate application

### **What answer does the question expect or suggest?**

<b>Type of Question and Examples</b>	<b>Answer</b>	<b>Value as a guiding question in leading discussion</b>
<b>Leading</b> Of course you all agree, don't you?  Surely you don't think that, do you?	Yes  No	None—it neither stimulates thought nor discussion.  None.
<b>Limiting</b> What are the three great truths in this chapter?	What the group thinks you think	None—it is clear to all that you have an exact answer in mind. Instead of stimulating discussion, you have started a mind reading competition! It would be much better to leave out the "the three" to make it open.

Type of Question and Examples	Answer	Value as a guiding question in leading discussion
Do you agree with that?	Yes or No	Some—it insists on a decision. But it must be followed by an open or wide-open question if you want to stimulate further discussion.
<b>Open</b> Who is this all about? Where did this happen? When was this? Why was it? What was the outcome? How can anyone benefit?	People Places Times Reasons Results Conditions, etc.	Much—it stimulates discovery, understanding or application according to how you word the questions. The key words are: <i>who, what, where, when, why and how.</i>
<b>Wide Open</b> What do others think? What does anyone think about that? Does anyone else have anything to add to that?	Any relevant thoughts	Very Much—it stimulates maximum thought and discussion. It is best used after an open question has just been answered.

### How personally are the hearers involved by the question?

• What should other people do about this?	Not at all
• What should 20th Century man do about this?	Very little
• What should unbelievers or Christians do about this?	Only if the hearers are of the group named
• What should you do about this?	All, except the questioner himself
• What will we do about this? or • What shall we do about this?	Fully committed

Notice how Jesus Christ helps His disciples to think objectively (without being personally involved) and then subjectively (being personally involved) about so important a matter as who He is (Mark 8:27-29).

- verse 27—“Who do men say that I am?”
- verse 29—“Who do you say that I am?”

### What degree of urgency does the question suggest?

<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What could we have done about this?</li> </ul>	None
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What could we do about this? or</li> <li>• What can we do about this?</li> </ul>	Vague
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What shall we do about this?</li> <li>• What should we do about this?</li> </ul>	Urgent
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What should we do about this as soon as possible? or</li> <li>• What should we do about this now?</li> </ul>	Most Urgent
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• What should we do about this whenever possible?</li> </ul>	Most Urgent & Recurring

## Evaluating the Discussion Group Members

In the book, *Lead Out*, published by NavPress (The Navigators, Colorado Springs, Colorado), Dr. Howard Hendricks of Dallas Theological Seminary is quoted as saying, “Each member of the group is faced with the right and the responsibility of being a mature participant. To accomplish this he must apply himself to the task of being an effective group member, constantly evaluating himself and his relationships with others.”

In the following amusing yet informative material adapted from *Lead Out*, Dr. Hendricks describes roles people play in a group situation. You will find it helpful in evaluating the members of your present discussion group, as well as in future groups.

## Characteristics of Immaturity

## NOTES

<b>ONLOOKER</b>	Content to be a silent spectator. Nods, smiles and frowns. Other than this he is a passenger instead of a crew member.
<b>MONOPOLIZER</b>	Brother Chatty rambles roughshod over the rest of the conversation with his verbal dexterity. Tenaciously clings to his right to say what he thinks—sometimes without thinking.
<b>BELITTLER</b>	This is Mr. Gloom. He takes the dim view. Minimizes the contributions of others. Usually has three good reasons why “it will never work.”
<b>WISECRACKER</b>	Feels called to a ministry of humor. Mr. Cherrio spends his time and talent as the group playboy. Indifferent to the subject at hand, he is always ready, with the clever remark.
<b>MANIPULATOR</b>	Brother Ulterior knows the correct approach to the problem, obviously. He manipulates the proceedings so his plan will be adopted.
<b>HITCHHIKER</b>	Never had an original thought in his life. Unwilling to commit himself. Sits on the sidelines until the decision has jelled, then jumps on the bandwagon.
<b>PLEADER</b>	Chronically afflicted with obsessions. Always pleading for some cause or certain actions. Feels led to share this burden frequently. One-track mind.
<b>SULKER</b>	Born in the objective case and lives in the kickative mood. The group won't accept his worthy contribution so he sulks.

## Characteristics of Maturity

## NOTES

<b>PROPOSER</b>	Initiates ideas and action. Keeps things moving.
<b>ENCOURAGER</b>	Brings others into the discussion. Encourages others to contribute. Emphasizes the value of their suggestions and comments. Stimulates others to greater activity by approval and recognition.
<b>CLARIFIER</b>	The one who has the facility to step in when confusion, chaos and conflict dominate. He defines the problem concisely. He points out the issues clearly.
<b>ANALYZER</b>	Examines the issues closely. Weighs the suggestions carefully. Never accepts anything without first “thinking it through.”
<b>EXPLORER</b>	Always moving into new and different areas. Probing relentlessly. Never satisfied with the obvious or the traditional.
<b>MEDIATOR</b>	Facilitates agreement or harmony between members, especially those who are “making phrases” at each other. Seeks to find mediating solutions acceptable to all.
<b>SYNTHESIZER</b>	Is able to put the pieces together. Brings the different parts of the solution or plan together and synthesizes them.
<b>PROGRAMMER</b>	The one who is ready with the ways and means to put the proposal into effect. Adept at organization. Moves in the realm of action.



One way to use this material is to read this section to your discussion group and then have them react and respond to the various roles in the group. You may want them to do so privately.

## Choosing an Assistant Group Leader

If your discussion group is growing and approaching eight to ten members, you may find it necessary to begin training an assistant to take over half of the group. This way your skill can be multiplied and you will be able to accommodate more people in the group or groups. An assistant is also valuable in making sure that each of the group members is helped individually in counselling situations as they arise.

In choosing a potential assistant, begin to prayerfully observe the group. One of them may seem to be more spiritually and emotionally mature than the others, with a better grasp of the Scriptures. He will be faithful in attendance and have his study well prepared.

As God begins to single out that individual for you, you may approach him to inquire as to whether he would like to assist you in the group leadership. If he responds favorably, you can begin to pray together for the group members. After each session, ask your assistant to go through the checklists with you to discuss what happened and why. You will find that often he is better able to observe what is happening in the group because he is not involved in leading it. You may also want to go through these four sessions on Bible Discussion with him to allow him to learn the principles himself.

When your assistant is comfortable in helping you lead, you can allow him to take over certain sessions himself. Then you can evaluate him. If you must be gone for a session, you can ask him to take over. Then when you return, be sure to inquire as to how the study went and to discuss any areas he may have discovered that were weak in your absence.

Finally, as your group enlarges, he will be able to become an independent leader for half of the group and your outreach will be doubled.

It is tragic that many faithful Bible study members who have attended weekly group discussions for years have never been helped to lead their own groups. If they are transferred to another city or country where there is no discussion fellowship, they find themselves totally unable to even consider starting their own group.

It is a wise Bible discussion leader who will impart to his group members the basic skills of leading a group for themselves as they become mature.

# Solutions to Common Problems

## **How to control those who want to do all the talking**

This is difficult. Calling for contributions from others often helps—“What do others think?” Sometimes it is necessary to talk privately with the guilty one, to explain the necessity of group participation. Often you can only pray for the particular person.

## **How to get back on the track when the discussion begins to wander**

It is difficult to get back on the track when the discussion has wandered off on a tangent. Therefore try not to go off the track. If you find that you have wandered from the subject, you may find it necessary to suggest that although the discussion is interesting, it is not within the subject at hand. Tell the group that if there is extra time at the end of the hour, you can return to the other discussion. Then gently restate the original question and proceed. You may not find yourself very popular when you have to steer the group away from an interesting topic back to the study, so do it gently and politely.

## **What to do when group members become less committed to the Bible study**

If a certain individual or individuals become spasmodic in attendance or fail to have their homework done, you may find it necessary to review the objective and standards that the group set up when it first started. Reviewing the objectives and standards periodically renews vision and helps to motivate the members to commitment.

Absence from the group or failure to prepare may also indicate that an individual is having special personal needs or struggles which are putting him under unusual pressure. The sensitive and concerned leader will seek out the person for special “one to one” time and sharing.

Finally, the wise leader will realize that a drop-off in attendance and enthusiasm may point to a failure in his leadership. As mentioned earlier, if the study consistently ends late, individuals may be reluctant to attend at all for fear that the late discussion will conflict with other appointments. Draggy and unenthusiastic discussion may reveal hastily and poorly prepared launching questions. Whatever the symptom, look for the underlying cause. Don’t give up, but seek to learn from these experiences and to serve those in your group.

## **What to do when someone gives a wrong answer**

Never contradict a person’s answer completely. He may be totally unscriptural in his thinking, but he has shared a portion of himself and his inner person with the group. If he is contradicted outright, he may feel rejected and tend to withdraw altogether. To handle such a situation, re-direct the same question back to the group.

“That’s interesting. What do others think?”

## NOTES

“Can anyone think of some Scripture verses that can help us here?”

Others may be able to balance the answer by their sharing. When all have contributed who so desire, you can gently summarize the scriptural viewpoint and move on to the next question.

## Conclusion

Bible study discussion is one of the most effective tools in follow-up and disciple-making. Through these groups young Christians can learn to know, understand and apply God’s Word. The fellowship and encouragement offered by other Christians in the group also help to nurture the young believers.

To lead a discussion group effectively is one of the greatest assets a disciple-maker can possess. We therefore need to be conscious of its importance and constantly seek to improve our leadership skills. Aim to master the art of discussion-leading. It will take years of practice, but God can make you effective as you learn if you depend upon His wisdom and grace.



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

## **BIBLE STUDY: THE HOLY SPIRIT**

The Bible explains what kind of relationship Christians can have with the Holy Spirit.

### **Who is the Holy Spirit?**

VERSES Pg. 771

1. What activities or characteristics of the Holy Spirit are mentioned in the following verses?

Acts 13:2 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Corinthians 2:10 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Corinthians 2:12,13 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Corinthians 2:11 \_\_\_\_\_

Ephesians 4:30 \_\_\_\_\_

Do these verses indicate that the Holy Spirit is a real person (though not physical)? Explain.

*In the Bible, the Holy Spirit has several names, including Comforter, Spirit of Truth, Spirit of Christ, Spirit of Jesus, and Spirit of God.*

2. What indications are there in the following verses that the Holy Spirit is God?

Genesis 1:2 \_\_\_\_\_

Hebrews 9:14 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalms 139:7,8 \_\_\_\_\_

3. When Ananias and Sapphira forfeited their lives (Acts 5:1-10), to whom had they lied?

Verse 3 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 4 \_\_\_\_\_

## THE TRINITY

God exists as three persons (*referred to as the Trinity*)—yet He is one. The three persons of the Trinity are God the **Father**, God the **Son**, and God the **Holy Spirit**. These three are one in substance, and function in perfect harmony. The human mind cannot fully comprehend God, especially His revelation of Himself as the Trinity. Yet we see unity with diversity in all parts of God's creation, all of which to a limited degree illustrate God's marvelous nature: one God in three persons.

- The Father is God invisible—John 1:18
- The Son is God revealed—John 1:14-18; Heb. 1:1-4
- The Holy Spirit is God working in men—John 16:8; 1 Cor. 2:10,11;6:19,20

(Other passages that teach the Trinity are: Matt. 3:16,17;28:19; John 14:16; 2 Cor. 13:14; and 1 Pet. 1:2.)

## Who Has the Holy Spirit?

4. How is the Holy Spirit involved in every conversion?

John 3:5,6 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Ephesians 1:13,14 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Titus 3:5 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

5. What has happened to every member of the body of Christ?

1 Corinthians 12:13 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

6. Read Romans 8:9-14. What statements indicate that every believer has received the Holy Spirit?

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

7. In spite of their imperfect lives, what does Paul remind the believers in Corinth?

1 Corinthians 3:16 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

8. Review your answers to question 12 in Book Two, chapter 4. How have your convictions been strengthened regarding the presence of the Holy Spirit in your life? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## The Work of the Holy Spirit

9. Read John 16:7-15.

a. What is the Spirit of God doing today? Verses 8-11 \_\_\_\_\_

b. What is He doing for believers? Verse 13 \_\_\_\_\_

c. Who or what does He emphasize? Verses 14,15 \_\_\_\_\_

10. Read Galatians 5:19-25. Notice the works (plural) of the flesh as contrasted with the fruit (singular) of the Spirit. Why do you think the word “fruit” is singular although several items are mentioned? (Compare with John 15:5) \_\_\_\_\_

*Just as light diffuses into a rainbow of colors when it shines through a prism, so the pure life of Christ can be displayed in your life by an array of Christian virtues.*

11. The victorious Christian life is the subject of Romans 8. How does the Holy Spirit help you live in victory?

Verse 2 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 14 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 16 \_\_\_\_\_

Verse 26 \_\_\_\_\_

12. What role did the Holy Spirit play in Paul’s missionary work?

Acts 13:2-4 \_\_\_\_\_

Acts 16:6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Corinthians 2:4 \_\_\_\_\_

## The Gifts of the Holy Spirit

13. The foundational passage for the subject of spiritual gifts is 1 Corinthians 12-14. Answer the following questions from 1 Corinthians 12.

a. How many believers have received a gift (a spiritual ability) from the Holy Spirit? Verses 7, 11 \_\_\_\_\_

b. Who decides which gifts are given to a believer? Verses 11,18 \_\_\_\_\_

c. For what purpose are these gifts given? (Compare verse 7 with 1 Peter 4:10) \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

d. Why is there a variety of gifts in the body of Christ? Verses 14-19 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

e. Does God want everyone to have the same gifts? Verses 28-30 \_\_\_\_\_

f. What gifts are mentioned in this chapter? Verses 8-10 and 28-30 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

14. What other gifts are mentioned in Romans 12:6-8 and in Ephesians 4:11? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

15. What are one or two ways that you have been best able to help other Christians?

---

---

---

Perhaps what you have listed is a gift from the Holy Spirit. Ask yourself:

- ***Am I fulfilled in this activity?***
- ***Are others fulfilled by this activity?***
- ***Does unity and spiritual growth result from this activity?***

How might you further develop your ability to help other Christians? \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

*Are you anxious to discover your spiritual gifts? God will show you this as you grow spiritually and lead a Christlike life. Remember you are to bear all the fruit of the Spirit, but not to possess all the gifts of the Spirit.*

16. If someone urged you to seek a particular gift of the Holy Spirit, what scriptural guidelines from 1 Corinthians 12-14 could you use in determining your response?

---

---

---

## **Your Responsibility**

17. Read Ephesians 5:18-21.

a. What is God's commandment concerning the Holy Spirit? Verse 18 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

b. List several results of being filled with the Spirit. Verses 19-21 \_\_\_\_\_

---

---

---

18. What is being filled with the Holy Spirit compared to in Ephesians 5:18? How are they similar and how are they different?

Similar	Different

19. What are some other results of being filled with the Spirit?

Acts 4:31 \_\_\_\_\_

Acts 11:24 \_\_\_\_\_

Romans 5:5 \_\_\_\_\_



20. What are you warned against in your relationship to the Holy Spirit?

1 Thessalonians 5:19 \_\_\_\_\_

Ephesians 4:30 \_\_\_\_\_

21. Look at the verses surrounding Ephesians 4:30.

a. What are some of the things that grieve the Holy Spirit? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. Is there anything in your life that grieves the Holy Spirit? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. What steps do you need to take? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

## **Remember These Points:**

Review the chapter subtopics and use them as an outline to write your own summary of the chapter here. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Bible Study Discussion Outline**

Lesson \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Lesson Objective

Time	Introduction	
	Prayer	
	Discussion Question	Notes
	<b>Heading Topic I:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic II:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	

Time	Discussion Question	Notes
	<b>Heading Topic III:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic IV:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic V:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Conclusion</b>	
	<b>Prayer</b>	



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



## **Chapter 6**

# **RECRUITING A PROSPECTIVE DISCIPLE**

There is strong competition today to gain people's allegiance. Many civic minded organizations are attracting people by the score. If it is not the Red Cross or the United Fund, then it is the lodge, the Boy Scouts, the women's club, or a thousand and one other committees, programs and organizations. As if this were not enough, we face the constant secularization of our society with its accompanying materialism. There is the theater, the country club, horse racing, television, football and a host of other sports.

Nowadays if a young man wants to move up the organizational ladder of a corporation, he has to pledge his total commitment to the company. Eight hours a day, five days a week, and good, hard work are just not enough. Go-ahead corporations want the young man to eat, sleep, and breathe their vision or product.

Into this arena of competition step the bold claims of Jesus Christ. Jesus said, "If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me" (Luke 9:23). Today, as always, Jesus is calling for disciples, not just Sunday Christians. His men and women refuse to yield to the lure of the world's system. In the world, yes; of the world, never. This type of a person has only one Lord—Jesus Christ. He and He alone orders the life; He determines where time, money, and other resources are spent.

As ambassadors of Jesus Christ, we are in the business of recruiting men and women to a life of discipleship. As we do this, there are some basic, though often forgotten principles, that are essential to follow if we are to recruit the

kind of people God can use. Earlier, we discussed certain characteristics or qualities that have to be present in a person's life if he is to be usable in God's sight. Here we want to consider things that the recruiter must implement if he is to get quality people involved in God's work. Again, let me remind you that this is in no way an exhaustive list, but is simply meant to stimulate your thinking.

• ***Recruit to a vision, not to an organization.***

An organization, however great it may be, is never highest in God's value system. God gives a vision. An organization must *serve* this vision. It can never *be* the vision. By organization, I mean any organized work, whether it be a church—Baptist, Methodist, Presbyterian; a Christian organization—Young life, Youth for Christ, The Navigators, Campus Crusade, Inter Varsity; or a group within a church—the men's fellowship, the women's guild, the young people's gathering.

We do not decide to have an organization and then seek to staff it with a president, vice-president, secretary. On the contrary, we involve ourselves in what we know to be the will of God, and if through that involvement we become numerically prosperous and need to organize, well and good.

The disciple must be careful never to preach faithfulness in order to make his organization more successful. How easy it is to fall into this trap. Our Sunday School attendance begins to lag, so we have a membership drive. From all outward appearances, this is to get people in-

volved in God's work, but more often than not, it has to do with statistics and breaking records rather than majoring on people getting into the Word of God. If we emphasize meeting people's spiritual needs, the chances are that membership numbers will take care of themselves.

Jesus said, "And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto Me" (John 12:32). John explains in the next verse that this was to signify the type of death the Christ should die. There is, nonetheless, a fundamental truth suggested here—when we, in our ministry, exalt the person of Jesus Christ, men will be drawn to Him.

I once had the privilege of observing a church in upper Michigan. Every year, the pastor, along with the elders, would ask the representatives from each group in the church to defend their right for existence on the basis of two criteria: (1) The legitimacy of their goals and objectives; and (2) the degree to which they achieved these goals and objectives.

If any group did not meet both of these criteria, the elders of the church would disband it. What a terrific idea! If we would ruthlessly apply this practice in all of our churches, it would doubtless contribute to a more vital and healthy fellowship.

The women in a local church decide to pray for the missionaries their church is sponsoring. Once a week they gather for that purpose. The first week they meet in Mrs. Jones' house, and Mrs. Jones prepares for them an assortment of cookies and tea and coffee. The next week they are at Mrs. Smith's house, and she, not wanting to be outdone by Mrs. Jones, does a slightly more elaborate job of preparing refreshments. As the weeks become months, the food preparation becomes increasingly more prominent. More and more time is spent around the table chatting, and less and less time is spent praying. The original purpose for the women's missionary guild was noble indeed, but their vision, which constituted the reason for their meeting, somehow went out of focus.

On numerous occasions in various dormitories and military barracks I have confronted young men with the claims of Jesus Christ. Inevitably, when I meet someone and tell him I would like to talk with him about Christ, his reply will be, "What denomination are you with?" Have we brainwashed the non-Christian world into believing that we are more interested in recruiting people to our particular denomination than we are to the person of Jesus Christ? It is so easy to fall into the trap of asking people to be faithful to pet programs rather than to the will of God. I learned long ago that those we are trying to recruit can tell the difference between the two.

***• Do not create the impression that people are doing you or God a favor by being faithful to the cause of Christ.***

The Apostle John relates an incident that occurred in the ministry of our Lord Jesus. The people wanted to crown Him as their king, but Jesus, sensing that their motives were impure, countered with some honest but hard-hitting observations. John says, "From that time many of His disciples went back, and walked no more with Him." At this point, Jesus did a rather startling thing. He turned to the Twelve and said to them, "Will ye also go away?" (John 6:66,67)

I do not believe that the Lord Jesus was feeling sorry for Himself. No, our Lord Jesus was once again underlining the cost involved in being His disciple.

If we neglect this important principle, we run the risk of recruiting unfaithful men. Deuteronomy 20:8 records God's prerequisites for the men who were to be involved in battle. "And the officers shall speak further unto the people, and they shall say, 'What man is there that is fearful and fainthearted? Let him go and return unto his house, lest his brethren's heart faint as well as his heart'"

Getting involved with God has always been on a volunteer basis. Irrespective of how great the need—and the need is great—Christ will not

sacrifice quality in order to gain quantity. As His ambassadors, neither can we.

One day I was asked to preach in one of the churches in the town where I lived. The pastor was to be out of town. As I talked with one of the elders on the phone, I asked if he would like me to teach in the Sunday School as well as preach at the morning worship service. He assured me that this would not be necessary since they had their appointed Sunday School teachers who would do the job.

After the morning service I was standing by the door shaking hands with the members of the congregation as they left when suddenly the superintendent of the Sunday School bustled up to me. With a rather flustered look on his face, he stuffed some materials into my hand, saying, "Here, I would like you to teach the young adults class; Mr. Griffin is not at church today."

I pointed out to him that I had been assured that it would not be necessary for me to teach Sunday School, and for that reason I was not prepared. Turning to leave he mumbled, "Well, if you don't teach, no one else will; and besides, I am not that prepared for the lesson I have to take either!"

So there I stood with the Sunday School materials in my hand wondering how it was that such a thing could happen. I pondered it for some time afterward and finally decided that it was probably the result of something that took place months previously when the superintendent was in the process of recruiting teachers.

One by one, he would ask people to teach a class, and one by one they would turn him down with a statement to the effect that they did not feel qualified.

Now take the example of Mr. Elliott. He did not really believe that he was unqualified when he gave this excuse. If the superintendent had said, "Mr. Elliott, I realize that you are not a qualified teacher, but are rather incompetent in this field; however, because of our desperate

plight, I wonder if you would teach a Sunday School class," Mr. Elliott would have left the church in a rage. No, the excuse he used was his way of saying that he did not want to pay the price of getting involved.

With everyone declining, the superintendent got desperate and began to plead with some of the people. One person eventually conceded, "Well, all right. As a favor to you, I will go ahead and teach."

Now I ask you, with this kind of an attitude, what sort of job is he going to do? His preparation will be haphazard and will probably take place during the commercials as he watches his favorite television programs on Saturday night. And if he does not feel like showing up or if he has some other commitments on Sunday, he does not hesitate to be absent.

Our Saviour feels honored and privileged to have us committed as His disciples, but God forbid that we should feel that we are doing Him a favor in being faithful. Similarly, if we cannot staff our programs with the right kind of people, then we should seriously think about terminating the program. I believe that there is one thing worse than not having any program at all, and that is having a program with the wrong type of leadership.

• ***Grow into business—don't go into business.***

This principle teaches us that we should start small and build in depth rather than concentrate on becoming large and as a result end up being top heavy. When you try to go into business rather than grow into business, you spread your resources thin and dissipate your efforts (see Prov. 24:27).

Let's say that you and I decided that we wanted to go deer hunting together and our objective was to bag as many deer as we could. Early one morning we find ourselves at the edge of a large clearing where 30 to 40 deer are grazing. We have two guns with us, a 30.06 with a telescopic sight and a 20-gauge shotgun.

Excitedly I whisper to you, “Use the shotgun—that way we might hit almost every deer in the clearing.”

“But we won’t kill any of them that way,” you whisper back. “Let’s use the 30.06, for then we can at least get one, maybe even two.”

“Yes, but if you use the 30.06, all the rest of them will get away.”

Here, then, is our dilemma. Do we want the satisfaction of knowing that we hit every deer in the clearing even though it means that all of them will get away? Or, do we want the satisfaction of bringing home one or possibly two deer, knowing that in so doing we left the rest untouched. I am sure that we would be unanimous in our decision to use the 30.06 rather than the shotgun.

Our ministry should have a pulsating rhythm to it of thrust and conserve. First, recruit a small band of men and then throttle back and build deeply into their lives. It is only after you have properly discipled them that you should thrust out again into another program of recruitment. Do not seek to involve yourself with more people than you can adequately handle.

**• *Tailor the job to the person rather than the person to the job.***

We must be extremely careful not to recruit people to use them. Our goal should be to help them, and people can usually tell the difference.

When the Lord Jesus met the rich, young ruler, He told Him to give away his wealth to the poor and then come and follow him. The Saviour was not trying to use the young man by asking him to lend support to the ministry, but rather was trying to meet his need—the first step being to divorce himself from his inordinate affection for wealth.

Prayerfully determine what the person you are helping needs and then help him in that area rather than finding out what he can do best and

asking him to do that. The time will come when we will want to maximize his gifts and abilities, but in the initial stages of the discipling process, we must major in his needs. Our Lord Jesus is far more interested in what a person is than in what he can do. “It is for you to be—it is for God to do.”

**• *Discipleship must take into consideration the development of the whole man.***

Development implies training. Someone might well say, “I thought we were discussing recruitment at this point, not training.” We are, but we must remember that in the Christian life, unlike other pursuits, recruitment and training go hand in hand. Let me illustrate.

When a young man is recruited into the Marine Corps, the first person he meets is a very polite, friendly officer who expounds to him all the virtues and advantages of the Corps. After the recruit has signed on the dotted line, he is sent to boot camp, and there meets the meanest, ugliest, most unpleasant man on the face of the earth, his drill instructor. The recruit’s initial reaction is, “What in the world have I gotten myself into?” But by then it is too late. There is absolutely nothing the recruit can do about it. The drill instructor could not care less how the recruit feels about him, the training process, or the Marine Corps in general. He is involved in training only, not recruitment.

This is not so in the Christian life. The Bible teaches that our involvement in Christ’s army is strictly on a volunteer basis—a man can leave anytime he wants. Recruitment, therefore, to discipleship must continue during the training process. We continue to recruit the would-be disciple to Christ by showing him that we are seeking to help him develop in every area of his life.

For the sake of simplicity, let me suggest that development can be categorized into three areas: teaching, training, and building. I will define teaching as the imparting of knowledge, training as the imparting of skill, and building as the imparting of character. The development

of our disciple must include all three: teaching, training, and building.

Suppose we want to teach our man to do evangelism. We sit him down and show him the various techniques, such as the ones we saw in Jesus' encounter with the Samaritan woman. He learns how to open a conversation about Christ. He memorizes key verses on the various aspects of the Gospel. He may even master two or three illustrations that can be used when witnessing to someone. Having taught him these things, have we accomplished our job? No, for he has never gone out and talked to anyone about Christ.

So now we need to train him. As the two of us go out to do evangelism together, both of us are fearful, he more than I, so I promise that I will begin the conversation; all he needs to do is observe. We do this a number of times until gradually I begin to involve him in the conversation with me. As he becomes increasingly more comfortable and proficient, he takes more and more of the conversation himself. Finally he is doing all the talking, and I am only observing. He can now lead a person to Christ as well as I can—maybe better. Is my job of imparting evangelism to him now finished? No, not yet.

Suppose that after all this your man has no heart for evangelism? Suppose that in his theology he believes that God will save whom He will save and let perish whom He will let perish, and that, since in the final analysis evangelism is God's work, not man's, there is no need to get involved in evangelism. If this is the case, then he will cease to evangelize the day we part company.

One final factor is necessary for his development, the building process. Here we seek to change the man's sense of values, and thereby ultimately to affect his whole personality. You can see that the farther we go in the development process, the more difficult the task becomes. Building is far more difficult than either teaching or training. How do you build into a man's life? How do you go about influencing personality? Here are some suggestions.

- *Do a Bible study on the subject. Help him see God's perspective on the matter.*

- *Create an environment in which the desired character trait is evident. If he stays in an environment in which evangelism is evident, then the chances are he will embrace it as a conviction of his own.*

- *Most important, pray it into his life.*

Scripture says that Jesus "increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man" (Luke 2:52). Here we see the four areas of our Saviour's development as a young man:

- Wisdom—the intellect
- Stature—the physical
- In Favor with God—the spiritual
- In Favor with Man—the social.

When we recruit men and women to become disciples of Jesus Christ, we should think of their development in these four areas. This does not mean that we have to be an expert in each of these areas in order to train a disciple. Our job is not to accomplish the whole task but to see that it gets done.

This is where the body of Christ complements you in the disciple-making ministry. Draw on the experience and expertise of a variety of people. As you work with your Timothy, your job is simply to see that he gets all the help and attention that he needs—just as a parent does with his child.

- ***There must be a proper balance between love and rebuke.***

There is probably as much said in the Bible about love as about any other one subject. God's disposition toward us is one of love, and He expects our disposition toward others to be the same. You will remember that the Lord Jesus called love one of the marks of discipleship, for He said, "A new commandment I give unto you,



that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one for another.”

But this love must be blended with rebuke. Possibly one of the greatest weaknesses in the body of Christ today is that we have surrendered our responsibility to discipline one another. Solomon in all his wisdom was directly to the point on this subject when he said, “Open rebuke is better than secret love. Faithful are the wounds of a friend; but the kisses of an enemy are deceitful” (Proverbs 27:5,6).

A personal friend once shared with me that his application from Bible study was to pray that God would cause at least one person each week to rebuke him on some area of his life that needed attention. That’s quite a challenge, isn’t it?

“Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee; rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee” (Proverbs 9:8). Quite often, the reason people do not rebuke us is that they are afraid of our response. They are afraid we will take it in a negative way, and they do not want to have their friendship or relationship with us jeopardized. So, when they see things amiss in our lives and want to help us, they are constrained to keep quiet because they suspect that we are “scorners” rather than “wise men.”

When was the last time somebody came up to you and pointed out something wrong in your life? If it has not been for quite awhile, it is certainly not because your life is above reproach. Things need correction in your life just as they do in mine. The only way people will call these areas to our attention is if they realize that we are truly wise people who will recognize that any rebuke they administer is done in love.

People are drawn into discipleship by giant doses of love. But if love is to come across as biblical love, it must be blended with rebuke. The kind of people God can use are those who respond to such a blend; Jesus cannot use people who feel sorry for themselves when corrected.

• ***You recruit a man to discipleship by being his servant.***

The mark of leadership is servanthood. Chesty Puller, considered by many as “Mr. Marine,” stated once that the Marine Corps needed men who could lead, not command. A commander tells people what to do; a leader shows people what to do by personal example.

This is definitely one of the toughest aspects of the discipling process. All of us like to be pampered and waited upon, but few of us like to roll up our sleeves and wait on others. Yet, this is precisely how people are recruited to the cause of discipleship. Few things are as impressive as seeing a person voluntarily serve others.

Men, when was the last time that you served your wife by helping to do the dishes, or did some other job that needed doing around the house? When was the last time you helped your children by making their beds or by tidying their rooms for them?

All of us who know God’s Word like to be called servants, but none of us want to act like servants. As a Christian when you call me a servant, you pay me one of the highest compliments I can be paid. When you treat me like a servant, I feel insulted. We all want to be called the servants of Jesus Christ, yet we resist like crazy acting like servants of Jesus Christ.

• ***You reproduce after your own kind whether you like it or not.***

This is one of the most sobering truths in the Bible. Many cannot and will not identify with the Apostle Paul when he says, “Be ye followers of me.” We piously say to ourselves and our disciples, “Paul may have been able to say that, but I certainly could never say that. Don’t follow me, follow Jesus Christ.” The fact of the matter is your disciple will follow you whether you want him to or not.

When you begin to help a person in the Christian life, he will follow you just as naturally as a young child follows his parents, and more

likely than not, he will become what you are, not what you say. I have seen this again and again in the Christian life. The leader may preach repeatedly that people ought to be involved in evangelism but unless he himself is involved in it, the chances are very remote that his people will be involved. Many illustrations in Scripture bear witness to the fact that you reproduce after your own kind. Abraham passed his wife off as his sister in order to save his skin (Genesis 20:2). His son Isaac did the same thing (Genesis 26:7). The Bible tells us that Eli, the high priest, did a poor job in raising his sons (1 Samuel 2:12-17). He reproduced this quality in the life of his protege, Samuel (1 Samuel 8:1-5).

It is imperative, therefore, that you major on being the kind of person you want your disciple to become. You can know for certain that you will reproduce what you are into his life. That is why this book began with the chapter, "The Kind of Person God Uses." In order for these qualities to be in the life of your disciple, they must first be in your life.

If you suspect for a moment that the essential qualities of a disciple are not in your own life, then this is where everything must start for you. Go back to chapter 1 and begin by implementing qualities of godliness into your own life.



## *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

# THE BRIDGE PRESENTATION

NOTES

### Introduction

The Great Commission will never be accomplished until every disciple is “fishing for men.” In this lesson we will be teaching you how to present the Gospel of Jesus Christ to another person. The tool we use is called the **Bridge** illustration. We use the Socratic form of evangelism in which people are given basic information and then asked specific questions based on the information. This has proven to be a very effective method of presenting the Gospel for a number of reasons:

- It creates a deductive dialogue.
- To answer the questions people must **reason** from the information given.
- The answer establishes the premises from which we continue to reason.
- People tell you what you wanted to tell them.
- People discover the truth on their own rather than by your giving them the answers.
- You have immediate feedback on what people do and don't understand.
- The truth is visualized as you write the answer into the illustration.

You are asked to memorize the following sequence of questions. You need not memorize word for word as you would memorize a Bible verse. However, if you adjust the questions, make sure that the question extracts the answer you want. A sloppy question may extract the wrong answer and hinder rather than help you. Memorize the sequence of questions in bold print. The logical answers are printed in script. Both are printed together so you can see the flow of thought for the dialogue.

### Gospel Presentation

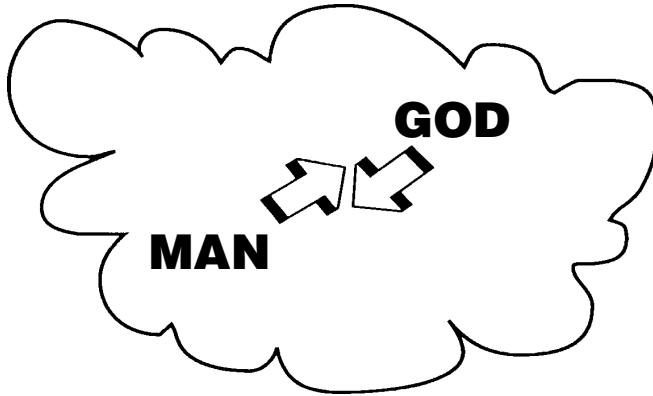
**A person must understand three things to become a Child of God or, in other words, a Christian. With your permission, I would like to show you from the Bible what these three things are.**

*Okay, if it doesn't take too long, I have a few minutes.*

NOTES

## **The First Thing**

The Bible records that God made Adam and Eve and placed them in the Garden of Eden with clear instructions about the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. They lived in perfect harmony with God and had fellowship with Him.



One day however, something happened in the Garden that caused a barrier to be erected between them and their Creator so that they could no longer have fellowship with Him.

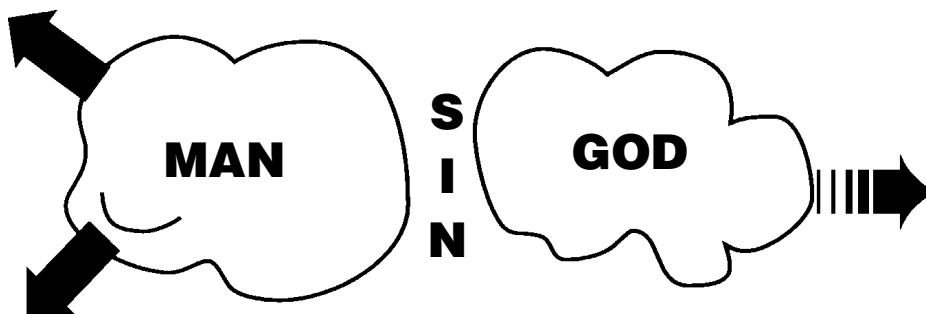
Can you tell me what that was?

*Was this when they ate the fruit and disobeyed God?*

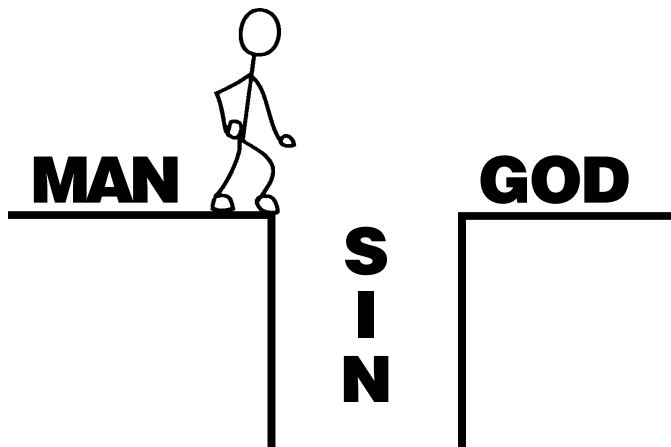
Yes, Adam and Eve chose to listen to the serpent's reasoning rather than God's command. There is a special word the Bible uses for this disobedience. Do you know what the Bible calls it?

*Was it sin?*

That's right-~~it~~ was sin.



We could illustrate this another way; we could put man standing on one side of a cliff, God on the other side and SIN in between, separating them.



The Bible talks about this in Romans 3:23.

Would you please read this passage to me?

*“For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”*

According to this passage, how many have sinned?

*It says “all.”*

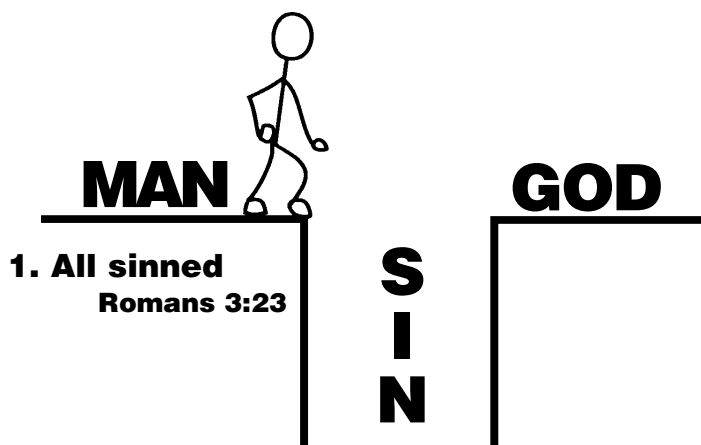
Does this mean I have sinned?

*It says “all,” so I guess that means you.*

Does it mean that you, too, have sinned?

*Yes, it means that I, too, have sinned.*

Now that’s the first thing a man must understand to become a Christian. Let’s write that down.



## The Second Thing

The second thing that a man must understand to become a Christian is found in Romans 6:23. Here the author draws a conclusion to this matter of sin.

Would you please read this passage to me?

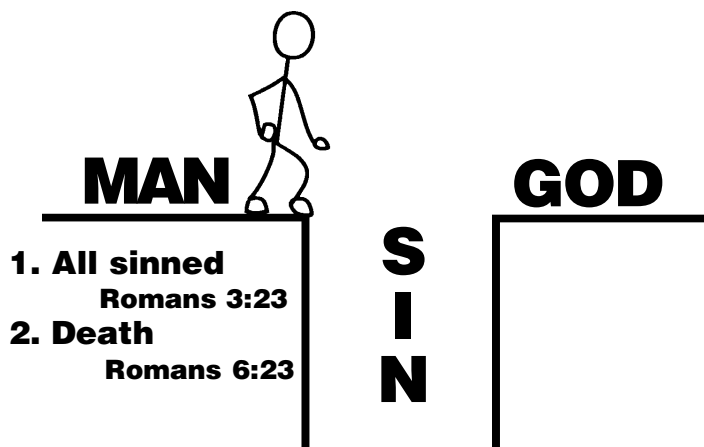
*"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

God does not expect us to labor and make this world a better place to live without paying us a wage. God fully intends to pay us a wage for all that we have ever done.

However, here God says that the wage for our sin is *what*?

*It says "death."*

This is the second thing that a man must understand to become a Christian, so let's write that down.



We could say many things about death. But if we reduce it to its simplest form, it is mere separation. Several years ago, my father-in-law died. Now he is in one place and I am in another; death has separated us. When Adam and his wife sinned, they died spiritually and were separated from God.

### **The Third Thing**

The third thing that a man must understand to become a Christian is found in Hebrews 9:27.

Would you please read this verse to me?

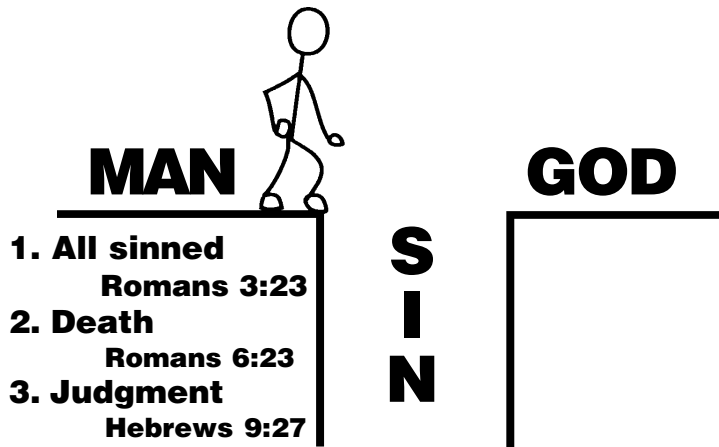
*"And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment."*

According to this verse, when a man dies he has an appointment with God, for what?

*Judgment.*

Since that is the third thing that a man must understand to become a Christian, let's write it down.

NOTES



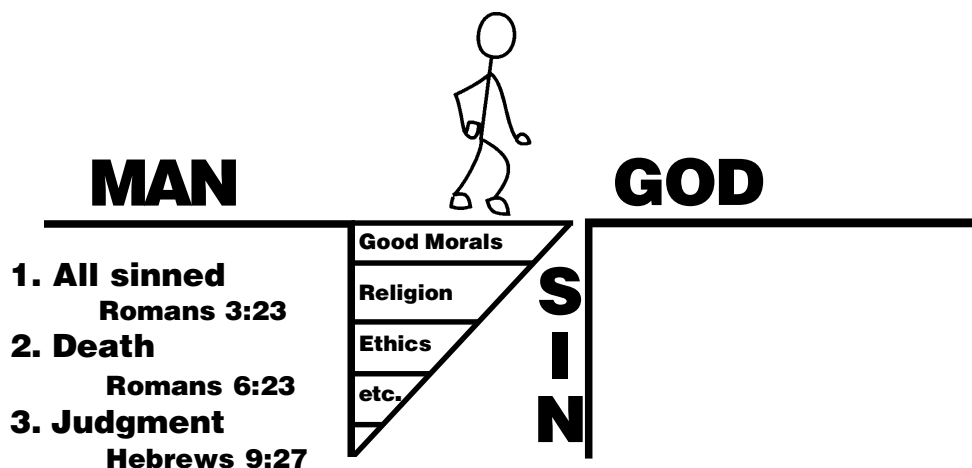
Now if it is true that all men have sinned, and that the penalty for sin is death and separation from God, and that the day is coming when man will be judged. This does not paint a very bright picture, does it?

*No, it certainly does not.*

Down through the ages, man has understood this and has tried to make his way back to God.

**What are some ways *you* think men try to make their way back to God?**

*By living a good moral life? Being religious? Helping his fellow man?*



You are right—this is how men try to make or work their way back to God. However, we learned in Romans 3:23 that all our efforts fall short of what God requires. In John 5:24, God reveals what is required. Here we learn three very interesting things that are relevant to what we have already learned.

I wonder if you would read this verse to me?

*“Most assuredly, I say to you, he who hears My word and believes in Him who sent Me **has** everlasting life, and **shall** not come into judgment, but has **passed** from death into life.”*

## NOTES

**Who’s speaking?**

*I guess it’s Jesus.*

**That’s right—Jesus says that if you will hear His Words...**

**Are these my words or Jesus’?**

Jesus’.

**And believe in Him who sent me...**

**Who sent Jesus?**

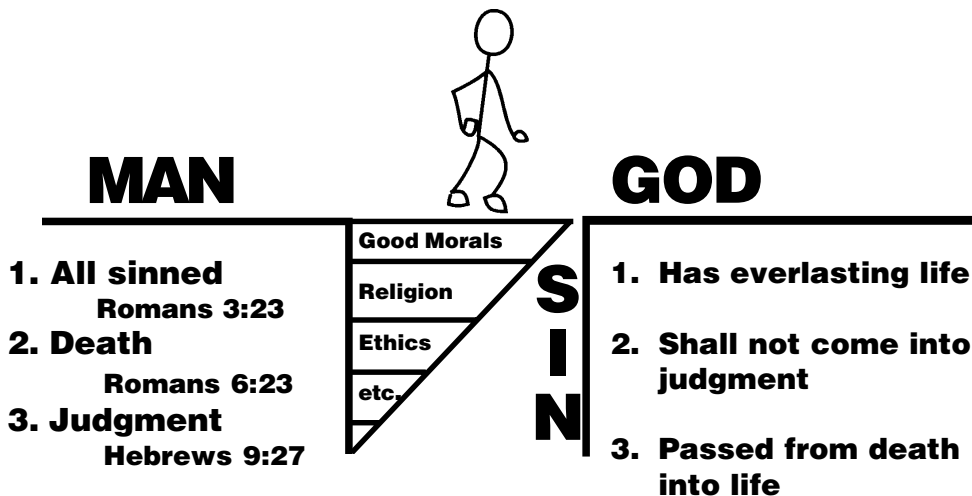
God.

**Three things would happen.**

**What are they?**

- *Has everlasting life*
- *Shall not face judgment*
- *Passed from death to life*

**So let’s write those down on the other side of the ravine.**



Notice the tenses of the verbs in each of the above phrases.

**In what tense is “has”—past, future, or present?**

*Present tense.*



**What does the present tense in this statement mean?**

*It means that right now, in the present, I can have eternal life.*

**That's right. Now in what tense is "shall not" ~~present~~, past or future?**

*Future tense.*

**So what does this phrase mean?**

*I will not be judged at some future date.*

**That's right. Now in what tense is "passed" ~~future~~, present or past?**

*Past tense.*

**And what does this phrase mean?**

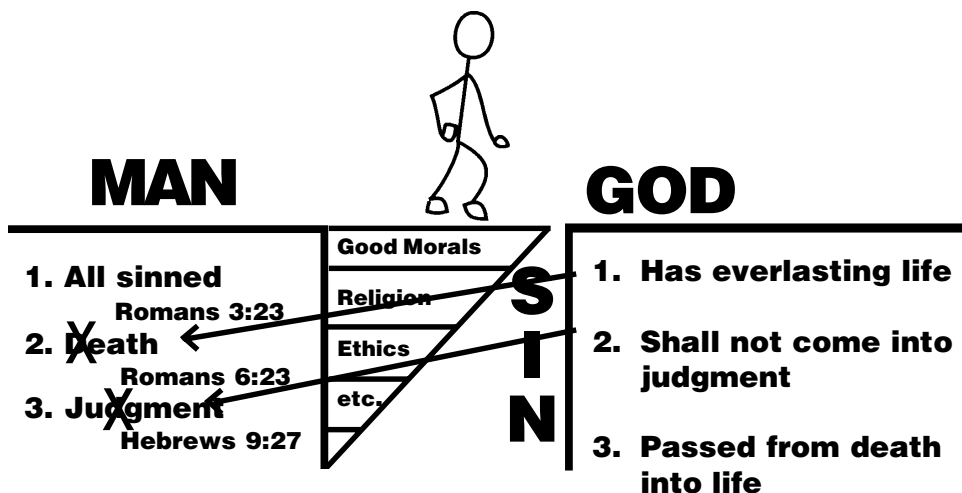
*I have already passed from death into life.*

**That's right. It is important that you understand this because if you now have everlasting life, what does that do to death?**

*It crosses out death.*

**If you shall not be judged, what does that do to judgment?**

*It cancels judgment.*



**When I hear God calling and believe, that means:**

- Intellectually I understand the facts of the Gospel;
- Emotionally I know and want to act on what I have heard;

- Volitionally I turn from man's side to God's side and place my faith in Jesus' finished work on the Cross for my sin.

NOTES

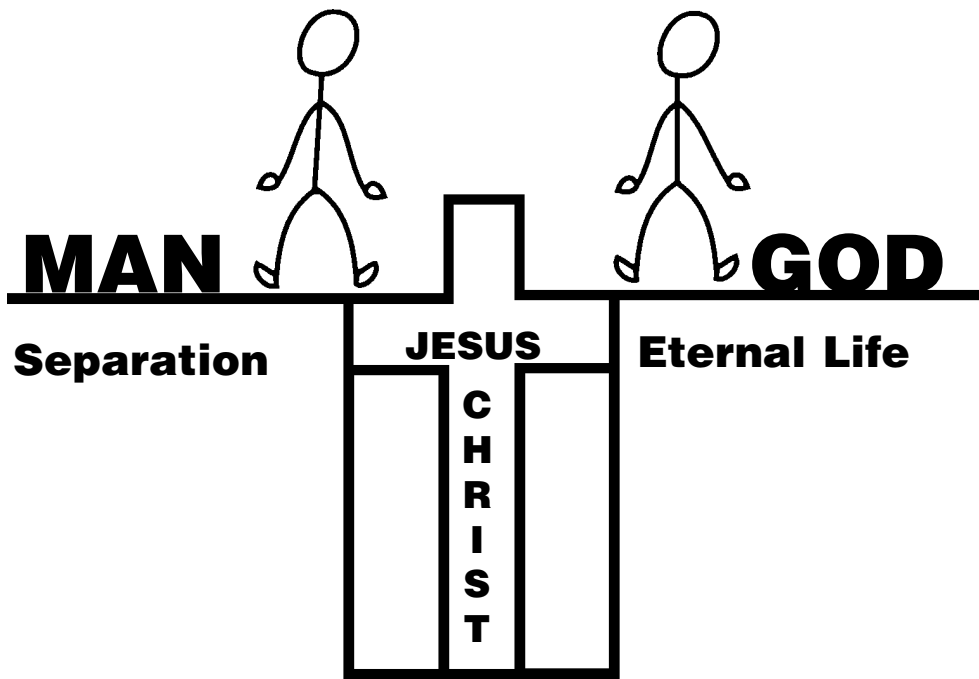
This allows me to pass over to God's side. The Bible says:

God is on one side and all the people on the other; Jesus, Himself man, is between them to bring them together, by giving His life for all mankind.

1 Timothy 2:5 (LB)

For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures...

1 Corinthians 15:3,4



If you were to place yourself into this illustration, where would you draw yourself?

*I would place myself on man's side.*

Is that where you want to be?

No.

NOTES

**Where do you want to be?**

*Over on God's side.*

**Do you know how to get there?**

*I'm not sure.*

**Let's look at John 1:12.**

**Will you read this verse to me?**

*"But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, even to those who believe in His name."*

**What must a man do to become a Child of God?**

*He must receive "Him."*

**Must receive whom?**

*Jesus Christ.*

**Do you know how to receive Him?**

*I'm not sure.*

**Let's look at another verse in Revelation 3:20.**

**Will you read this to me?**

*"Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me."*

**Who is speaking?**

*Jesus.*

**What is He doing?**

*He is knocking at the door.*

**What door?**

*The door to man's heart and life.*

**Why is He knocking?**

*Because He wants to come in.*

**The way to receive Christ is to open the door of your heart and life and let Him in. To get from man's side to God's side, all you must do when we pray is repent of your sins, and ask God to do three things:**

- **Forgive you for your sins.**
- **Come into your life and help you to become the kind of person He created you to be.**
- **Give you the gift of eternal life so that you might be with Him forever.**

**I am going to ask you to pray these three things loud enough so that when you have finished I can say a prayer to God for you. Let's pray.**

**NOTES**



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*** **Evangelism Report**

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

**I  
N  
F  
O**

Contact Name \_\_\_\_\_ Phone \_\_\_\_\_

Address \_\_\_\_\_

City \_\_\_\_\_ State \_\_\_\_\_ Zip \_\_\_\_\_

1. Describe the person to whom you presented the Bridge: \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

2. Under what circumstances was the presentation made? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

3. Did you use the opening questions? \_\_\_\_\_

☐ Set One

☐ Set Two

☐ Set Three

☐ Other

Explain: \_\_\_\_\_

Did the opening set up the Bridge Presentation for you? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

4. Did you draw out the Bridge Presentation? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

5. Did you extract the Gospel socratically? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

6. Did the person receive the Lord? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

7. What did you learn from the experience? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

8. Did you consider it a negative or positive experience? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

9. What are your plans for following through on the presentation? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory

## Discussion Questions For Readings/Instructions

**Discussion Questions:**

**Instruction:**

**Evaluation:**

**Follow-Up Need for next week:**



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/7

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ The Focal Point of Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review The Focal Point of Discipleship</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete Spiritual Warfare (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<i>Write a set of Discussion Questions</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 7</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Pray for a convert</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Proverbs 3:9,10</i>		
<i>2 Corinthians 9:6,7</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		





# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **THE FOCAL POINT OF DISCIPLESHIP**

NOTES

### **Introduction**

As long as the Sovereignty of God is only a philosophy or even a theology rather than a reality, we will never enter into God's best for our lives. The sovereignty of God is the substance from which faith is generated. It is the key which sets us free to do the will of God.

In our study of the *Principle of Discipleship*, we learned that we have been commanded to trust God and not to worry or be anxious about tomorrow. In this lesson we will discover why worry and anxiety are totally unnecessary to the Christian.

### **Trusting the Sovereignty of God**

On what basis is man to trust God? Why should we abandon our lives to Him? Does He have both the power and the concern to deal with the situations that affect each life?

### **God is the Creator of All**

*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

*Genesis 1:1*

*He has made the earth by His power; He has established the world by His wisdom, and stretched out the heaven by His understanding. When He utters His voice—there is a multitude of waters in the heavens: "He causes the vapors to ascend from the ends of the earth; He makes lightnings for the rain; He brings the wind out of His treasures."*

*Jeremiah 51:15,16*

*By the word of the LORD the heavens were made,  
And all the host of them by the breath of His mouth.*

*Psalms 33:6*

## God is the Head Above All

## NOTES

*Yours, O LORD, is the greatness, the power and the glory, the victory and the majesty; for all that is in heaven and in earth is Yours; Yours is the kingdom, O LORD, and You are exalted as head over all. Both riches and honor come from You, and You reign over all. In Your hand is power and might; in Your hand it is to make great and to give strength to all.*

*1 Chronicles 29:11,12*

*...and what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the working of His mighty power which He worked in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality and power and might and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age but also in that which is to come. And He put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be head over all things to the church...*

*Ephesians 1:19-22*

## God is All-Powerful (Omnipotent)

*Ah, Lord God! Behold, You have made the heavens and the earth by Your great power and outstretched arm. There is nothing too hard for You.*

*Jeremiah 32:17*

*Then Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth."*

*Matthew 28:18*

## God is All-Knowing (Omniscient)

*Remember the former things of old, for I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times things that are not yet done, saying, 'My counsel shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure...'*

*Isaiah 46:9,10*

*Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and His ways past finding out! "For who has known the mind of the Lord? Or who has become His*

*counselor?” “Or who has first given to Him and it shall be repaid to him?” For of Him and through Him and to Him are all things, to whom be glory forever. Amen.*

*Romans 11:33-36*

## **God is Everywhere Present (Omnipresent)**

*Where can I go from Your Spirit? Or where can I flee from Your presence? If I ascend into heaven, You are there; If I make my bed in hell, behold, You are there. If I take the wings of the morning, And dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea, Even there Your hand shall lead me, And Your right hand shall hold me. If I say, “Surely the darkness shall fall on me,” Even the night shall be light about me; Indeed, the darkness shall not hide from You, But the night shines as the day; The darkness and the light are both alike to You. For You have formed my inward parts; You have covered me in my mother’s womb.*

*Psalms 139:7-13*

## **God Has Given Jesus Power Over All Things**

### **Death**

*Now when He had said these things, He cried with a loud voice, “Lazarus, come forth!” And he who had died came out bound hand and foot with graveclothes, and his face was wrapped with a cloth. Jesus said to them, “Loose him, and let him go.”*

*John 11:43,44*

### **Demons**

*Now there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit. And he cried out, saying, “Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God!” But Jesus rebuked him, saying, “Be quiet, and come out of him!” And when the unclean spirit had convulsed him and cried out with a loud voice, he came out of him. Then they were all amazed, so that they questioned among themselves, saying, “What is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authority He commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey Him.”*

*Mark 1: 23-27*

### **Disasters**

*And a great windstorm arose, and the waves beat into the boat, so that it was already filling. But He*

*was in the stern, asleep on a pillow. And they awoke Him and said to Him, "Teacher, do You not care that we are perishing?" Then He arose and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea, "Peace, be still!" And the wind ceased and there was a great calm.*

*Mark 4:37-39*

### **Disease**

*Then a leper came to Him, imploring Him, kneeling down to Him and saying to Him, "If You are willing, You can make me clean." And Jesus, moved with compassion, put out His hand and touched him, and said to him, "I am willing; be cleansed." As soon as He had spoken, immediately the leprosy left him, and he was cleansed.*

*Mark 1:40-42*

### **Dominions**

*...far above all principality and power and might and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age but also in that which is to come.*

*Ephesians 1:21*

## **God Controls All Things**

*Daniel answered and said: "Blessed be the name of God forever and ever, for wisdom and might are His. And He changes the times and the seasons; He removes kings and raises up kings; He gives wisdom to the wise and knowledge to those who have understanding."*

*Daniel 2:20,21*

*All the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing; He does according to His will in the army of heaven and among the inhabitants of the earth. no one can restrain His hand or say to Him, "What have You done?"*

*Daniel 4:35*

*But He is unique, and who can make Him change? And whatever His soul desires, that He does. For He performs what is appointed for me, and many such things are with Him.*

*Job 23:13,14*

*Then the LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?" So Satan answered the LORD*

*and said, "Does Job fear God for nothing? Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!" So the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, all that he has is in your power; only do not lay a hand on his person." Then Satan went out from the presence of the LORD.*

*Job 1:8-12*

God indeed is worthy of our trust. He alone is in sovereign control over every factor which can affect our lives and ministries. By the day, the hour, the minute, and the second, God is alert to everything and allows nothing to happen which will not ultimately result in the accomplishment of His great purpose. In universal and world events, as well as in daily routine happenings, *God always holds the trump card*. He always has the last word on any matter. He is altogether sovereign!

## **God's Personal Sovereignty Over Me**

### **He knows me**

Even before I come to Christ and learn to know Him, God knows me. He knows me intimately because He is the One Who created me. He knows my thoughts, my desires, my strengths and my weaknesses. He is the One Person in the universe with Whom I must be altogether honest, because He already knows all.

*O LORD, You have searched me and known me. You know my sitting down and my rising up; You understand my thought afar off. You comprehend my path and my lying down, And are acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word on my tongue, But behold, O LORD, You know it altogether.*

*Psalms 139:1-4*

*And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things are naked and open to the eyes of Him to whom we must give account.*

*Hebrews 4:13*

### **He cares for me**

This all-knowing God whom we can never impress, fool, or hide from, loves us beyond all comprehension. He longs to share our burdens as well as our joys. He desires to delight our hearts with His goodness. He wants to use His power in our lives to transform us into all He intended for us to be.

*Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.*

*Matthew 11:28,29*

*Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.*

*Hebrews 4:16*

*...casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you.*

*1 Peter 5:7*

## **He will provide for me**

When Christ calls us to put His Kingdom first, He is very aware of our daily and material needs. He is also aware of our emotional and spiritual needs. To his children who obey His voice, He promises to provide every need of their hearts and lives. No matter what the economy looks like, God is not bankrupt. He is King of Kings!

*But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.*

*Matthew 6:33*

*And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.*

*Philippians 4:19*

*And God is able to make all grace abound toward you, that you, always having all sufficiency in all things, have an abundance for every good work.*

*2 Corinthians 9:8*

## **He is in control of every trial that touches me**

When everything is going our way it is hard not to accept the idea that God is in Sovereign control over our lives. The real test comes when trials and problems confront us. Then we may wonder, "Is God really sovereign and in control of my life?" There can only be one answer. Yes!

*In everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.*

*1 Thessalonians 5:18*

*And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.*

*Romans 8:28*

*Giving thanks always for all things to God the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
Ephesians 5:20*

A paraphrase of Romans 8:28 could read as follows:

*The Lord may not have planned that this should overtake me, but He has most certainly permitted it. Therefore, though it were an attack of an enemy, by the time it reaches me it has the Lord's permission and therefore, all is well. He will make it work together with all of life's experiences for good.*

Knowing that God is in control, He has prescribed certain things for us to do.

*My brethren, count it all joy when you fall into various trials, knowing that the testing of your faith produces patience. But let patience have its perfect work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking nothing.*

*James 1:2-4*

*Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.*

*Matthew 11:28,29*

*Rejoice always...*

*1 Thessalonians 5:16*

## **He has a plan for me**

God chose us in Christ long before the foundations of the world were ever laid. He called us with a perfect plan for our lives which He desires to accomplish in and through us.

*For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you a future and a hope.*

*Jeremiah 29:11*

*Who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before time began,*

*2 Timothy 1:9*

The plan of God is unique and specific for each individual, but for all believers it is a two-fold plan. We can perhaps best illustrate this two-fold purpose by the spokes of the Wheel Illustration.

## The Vertical

The first part of God's plan for us is the vertical relationship He desires us to have with Him. This relationship was made possible because of His great love for us which sent Jesus Christ to the Cross.

*For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.*

*John 3:16*



Once we have come to Him, God desires this vertical relationship to deepen and mature until it becomes like that of King David's walk with God.

*One thing I have desired of the LORD, That will I seek: That I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD, and to inquire in His temple.*

*Psalms 27:4*

Jesus Christ is the One who established our relationship with God, and He is also the One who is the source of power to live out the relationship. As the hub is the source of the power for the wheel, Jesus Christ at the center of our lives gives power to live a life that pleases God.

Christ has also shown us the keys of maintaining a vital walk with Him. They are *prayer* and the *Word of God*. Through these mediums we are able to both communicate to God as well as to hear Him speaking to us through the written word.

## The Horizontal

When the vertical relationship is well established, God desires to use the Christian to win and disciple others. The exact context for this will be different for each individual, but God also desires us to have a horizontal relationship to others in this world.

To those who are lost and without Christ, God desires the Christian to reach out through witnessing (evangelism).

*And He said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men."*

*Matthew 4:19*



*You did not choose Me,  
but I chose you and ap-  
pointed you that you  
should go and bear  
fruit, and that your  
fruit should remain,  
that whatever you ask  
the Father in My name  
He may give you.  
John 15:16*



To those who are fellow mem-  
bers of God's family, God de-  
sires the Christian to reach out  
in *fellowship* and in *disciplemaking*.

*And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doc-  
trine and fellowship, in the breaking of bread, and  
in prayers.*

*Acts 2:42*

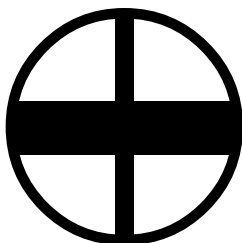
(The word "fellowship" is the essence of that brotherly harmony  
which existed in the early church.)

*Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations,  
baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the  
Son and of the Holy Spirit,*

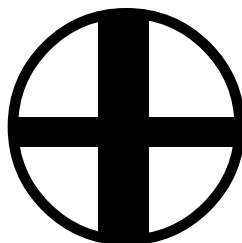
*Matthew 28:19*

## **The Balance**

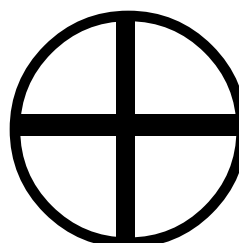
God wants to bring a balance into our lives so our devotion and service  
are in harmony. If there is vertical weakness, you can't compensate  
for it on the horizontal. And if there is a horizontal weakness, you  
can't compensate on the vertical.



**Vertical  
Weakness**



**Horizontal  
Weakness**



**Balanced  
Life**

As we focus upon God's sovereignty and learn to trust Him fully, He  
will bring his harmony and balance into our lives.



# ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

## **BIBLE STUDY: SPIRITUAL WARFARE**

To discover and apply the truth of God's word is to enter the field of spiritual warfare. A battle rages over the hearts and minds of men. But growth comes with conflicts, and God has promised that "in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us" (Romans 8:37).

**VERSES Pg. 785**

### **The Battle**

1. How is the Christian life described by the apostle Paul in Ephesians 6:12? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

2. Read 2 Timothy 2:3,4. How would you describe the kind of life Paul wrote about? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

### **Know Your Enemy**

Knowing the enemy is as important for a Christian as for a military commander—both are engaged in battle.

3. In Revelation 12:9,10, what names are given to the enemy? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

What does he do? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

4. In the last instance where Satan's name is recorded in Scripture (Revelation 20:7-10), what happens to him? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

5. How did Satan discredit God's word when he deceived Eve?

Genesis 3:1-5 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

*Satan makes it his continual business to cast doubt on God's Word and to discredit God's Son.*

6. What can be learned about Satan in the following verses?

Luke 8:12 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

John 8:44 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

2 Corinthians 4:3,4 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

2 Corinthians 11:3 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

2 Corinthians 11:14 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

7. Read the account of Christ's confrontation with Satan in Luke 4:1-13.

a. What was Jesus' physical condition when the devil appeared? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. What desires did Satan appeal to in the three temptations? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

8. Write out 1 Peter 5:8,9 in your own words. \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

## **The Conflict With Sin**

9. How do the following verses describe sin?

Isaiah 1:2 \_\_\_\_\_  
Romans 14:23 \_\_\_\_\_

1 John 3:4 \_\_\_\_\_

10. Sin is breaking God's Law. Expand on this definition after looking at Jesus' summary of the Law in Matthew 22:37-40. \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

11. Read James 4:1-4.

a. Where does hostility originate? Verses 1-3 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. What competes with your devotion to God? Verse 4 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

c. Does this passage help explain any conflicts you have? If so, explain. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

12. What characterizes the world? Ephesians 2:2,3 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

13. Paul taught that to avoid conformity to the world, we must be renewed in mind (Romans 12:2). Compare this statement with Philippians 4:8, and write a short paragraph on what it means to be renewed in your mind.

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

14. What is promised to the man who successfully endures temptation? James 1:12 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

*Some say, "I have my faults, but at the bottom I have a good heart." Alas! It is this that deceives you, for your heart is the worst part of you.*

*—Charles Haddon Spurgeon*

## **The Assurance of Victory**

15. According to Hebrews 2:14,15, what did Christ's death on the cross mean for Satan?

\_\_\_\_\_

What did it mean for men? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

16. What is the basis for victory from the following verses?

1 John 2:14 \_\_\_\_\_

1 John 4:4 \_\_\_\_\_

1 John 5:4,5 \_\_\_\_\_

17. Write out 1 Corinthians 15:57 in your own words as a personal prayer. Take a moment to thank God for your assurance of daily victory in Jesus Christ. \_\_\_\_\_

## Daily Victory

18. From Revelation 12:11, list three factors that give victory over Satan. Why do you think each one is important?

Factor For Victory	Why is This Important?

19. From Ephesians 6:14-18, list the equipment of the spiritual warrior. What practical steps will enable you to use these items in daily life?

Equipment	Practical Steps

Which of these items do you believe is most lacking in your life? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

What do you believe you should do about it? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

20. What can you do each day to enjoy victory over sin?

Psalm 86:3 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalm 96:2 \_\_\_\_\_

Psalm 119:97 \_\_\_\_\_

Luke 9:23 \_\_\_\_\_

Hebrews 3:13 \_\_\_\_\_

21. What should you do when you have sinned? Psalm 32:5 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

22. Read Psalm 103:9-12. Describe God's attitude toward all the sins you have committed.  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

## **Remember These Points:**

Review the chapter subtopics and use them as an outline to write your own summary of the chapter. \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Bible Study Discussion Outline**

Lesson \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Lesson Objective

Time

Introduction

Prayer

Discussion Question

Notes

**Heading Topic I:**

Discovery

Understanding

Correlation

Application

Summary

**Heading Topic II:**

Discovery

Understanding

Correlation

Application

Summary

Time	Discussion Question	Notes
	<b>Heading Topic III:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic IV:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic V:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Conclusion</b>	
	<b>Prayer</b>	





## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4





## **Chapter 7**

# **HOW TO TRAIN A DISCIPLE FOLLOW-UP**

Making disciples begins with the task of evangelism. If we work only with Christians in our disciple-making ministry, then the net gain to the kingdom of God is zero. Aggressive evangelism is the mark of the committed disciple, and it is primarily from the fruit of this evangelism that he chooses his “Timothy”—the man he seeks to disciple.

If the first step in the disciple-making process is evangelism, then the second is follow-up. It is one thing to engage the enemy in combat and set the captives free, but it is altogether another thing to spend the necessary time with a new convert to see that he grows and matures into the likeness of Jesus Christ. In physical reproduction the responsible parents’ task only begins when the child is born. After the birth come the years of careful nurture and training to ensure that the child grows and develops to the point where he can marry and assume the responsibility for his own family.

Follow-up, then, is spiritual pediatrics. It has to do with the care and protection of the spiritual infant. It deals with the development of new babes in Christ from the time of their new birth until they grow and provide for themselves.

The Bible teaches us that God has a father’s heart. We saw this in our study of Isaiah 40-66. Jesus Himself taught us to refer to God as “our Father.” Follow-up then is relating to the young Christian the loving concern that our God has shown toward us. We are shocked to the point of unbelief when we hear of a baby being left alone without proper care, but for some reason, our conscience is dulled when we hear of new

babes in Christ being neglected. Left alone, they slip into carnality.

Many are afraid to become involved in the task of follow-up because they feel inadequate. They do not think they know enough about the Christian life to assume the responsibility of becoming a spiritual parent. Or they feel that they have so far to go in the Christian life themselves that someone should be teaching them rather than they teaching someone else. All of these feelings of inadequacy are quite normal and probably will never leave. They merely parallel the human (or physical) situation. I have never met parents who, while raising their children, felt they had all the answers.

Follow-up, then, is nothing more and nothing less than parental concern coupled with common sense. There are, however, some basic guidelines for helping a new Christian reach maturity. What are the responsibilities of parents toward their new-born children? Let us briefly analyze a few of the more obvious ones.

### **ENSURE PROPER CARE AND PROTECTION, AND DEAL WITH ANY PROBLEM AREAS**

My oldest child, Deborah Lynn, was born with hyaline membrane disease. A membrane formed around that part of the lung which mixes oxygen with the blood. In most cases, children born with this disease die. Our child was given a 10% chance of survival. You can imagine how grateful we were when we discovered that Deborah had the most eminently qualified pediatrician in the city taking care of her. He put her in an

isolette and took every precaution to make sure she lived. By God's grace, she did, and today, Deborah Lynn is a healthy young lady.

The care and concern the doctor gave Deborah Lynn serves as a beautiful illustration of the diligent involvement required of us when dealing with new Christians. Assuming that you have the responsibility for a "new babe in Christ," here are some suggestions.

- ***Go over carefully with him the plan of salvation.***

"And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life" (1 John 5:11,12).

Every person who has the Son has life. You can ask the new Christian, "Where is Jesus Christ tonight?" Wherever else this babe says Christ is, he should also say that Christ is in his heart. An illustration of a pencil inside a Bible can be used—the Bible representing Jesus Christ and the pencil, eternal life. If the believer has the Bible (Jesus Christ), then he also has the pencil (eternal life), for eternal life is to be found in the Son.

Unfortunately, many Christians spend years of their lives living in a fog of uncertainty. Because they do not understand what the Scriptures teach on this subject, they lack assurance of salvation. Proper growth and development can only stem from the new Christian knowing that he is a child of God for all eternity.

- ***Pray for him.***

The overwhelming majority of New Testament prayers deal not with the unsaved, but with the growth and maturity of new Christians. Two great prayers of Paul in Ephesians, for example, deal with his concern for their growth and maturity (see Eph. 1:15-23, 3:14-20).

I find that prayer is the hardest work I can engage in as a Christian. At the same time, it is the most important part of follow-up. If you also

find that prayer is hard work, let me suggest that you simply pray for your new Christian the same prayers that you find in the Bible, such as those in Ephesians. You can do a study on the New Testament prayers that would be applicable and then use them as part of your follow-up program.

Another thing I do is think through on the areas in which I am having difficulty; then intercede for my friend in these matters. The Bible says, "There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man" (1 Cor. 10:13). All of us fight the same temptations and have the same basic needs.

- ***Visit him soon and frequently after his decision for Christ.***

This is particularly important during the days immediately following his conversion experience. Satan regroups and marshals his counteroffensive, and the new Christian is particularly vulnerable because he does not understand the nature of spiritual warfare nor the great truths in the Bible that can help him through trials and temptations.

In the first 10 days of a child's life, his mother must be with him almost constantly. The older the child becomes, the less frequently she needs to see him. Again, what is true in the physical realm is also true in the spiritual.

One of the most significant ministries you can have with your new Christian is that of encouragement. Let him know that he is now a part of the family of God and that the two of you are brothers in Christ. One of the things that Satan will try to deceive him into believing is that the temptations and problems that he faces are unique to him. Encourage him with the fact that we all fight the same problems; and not only this but during these times of temptations, you want to stand together with him against them.

## **ENSURE A PROPER DIET**

When little Deborah Lynn finally came home

from the hospital, victorious over her disease, we had to bear the responsibility for feeding her regularly. We fed her not when we wanted to but when she wanted to be fed—and often this was at the most inconvenient times. One thing was certain, we did not ask her to manage for herself. It would have been cruel to say to her, “Sweetheart, if you want to eat, there is plenty of food in the refrigerator; help yourself.”

The proper spiritual diet for a new Christian should include at least:

- ***A consistent quiet time.***

In Mark 1:35 we read of one of the habits the Lord Jesus developed. “And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, He went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.” Each day should begin with a brief period of fellowship with the Lord, for thus the believer gets his spiritual nourishment for the day. The quiet time should include a time of prayer and some time in the Word. The simple acrostic ACTS is useful in helping a person get started in prayer.

***Adoration***—Begin with a time of worship, praying over the greatness of God. Encourage the new Christian to use some of the great prayers in the Bible such as that in 1 Chronicles 29:11-14.

***Confession***—This is a time of acknowledging our sinfulness and dependence upon the Lord. “If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” (John 1:9). This verse is the Christian’s bar of soap. Let us imagine that my little child, acting in disobedience, goes outside and plays in the mud. As she comes in crying and asking for forgiveness, not only do I forgive her, but I take her into the bathroom, wash her from head to foot, and wash her clothes, so that when we are through, it is as though she had never been outside. This is the promise the Lord Jesus makes to the believer in 1 John 1:9.

***Thanksgiving***—the long list of sins mentioned in Romans 1 begins with the phrase in verse 21,

“neither were thankful.” Early in the Christian life the believer must learn the importance of being thankful. This part of the prayer time consists of enumerating the many blessings bestowed upon us by our gracious God. Scripture says, “Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning” (James 1:17).

***Supplication***—We spend time praying for others—our family, friends, church, country. You can help the young Christian in this aspect of prayer, teaching him how to use prayer pages. Take a sheet of paper and draw a line down the middle, entitling the left-hand column “requests” and the right-hand column “answers.” Beside each request list the date entered. When the prayer is answered, jot down how it was answered with the date. In a graphic way, this will show the new Christian the marvelous way that God answers prayer.

Of the many good helps available to the Christian for his quiet time, three favorites of mine are: *The Quiet Time*, published by InterVarsity Press, *Appointment with God*, and *Seven Minutes with God*, both published by The Navigators.

Help the young Christian to be consistent in having his quiet time by initially having it with him. For example, have a quiet time with him every morning during the first week of his new walk with the Lord. During the second week meet with him every other morning, and then once a week for the next month or two.

Encourage him to begin with a short period of time with the Lord rather than with a protracted time. This is the beauty of the little plan mentioned in *Seven Minutes With God*. It is better to have seven minutes with the Lord consistently every day and stay with it than to begin by having one hour with the Lord every morning, and then quit in discouragement.

- ***Bible reading.***

“As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the Word, that ye may grow thereby” (1 Peter

2:2). Start the young Christian with a small portion, preferably from the New Testament or the Psalms and incorporate it in his quiet time. One method that has worked with a great deal of success is to read a paragraph or two, and, as you meditate on it, circle or mark one verse that is particularly meaningful. This becomes the favorite verse for the morning. Do this for six mornings, each morning picking out a favorite verse. Then during the quiet time on the seventh morning, review the six favorite verses and pick out the one that is the favorite among the favorites. That verse can then be written on a small card and memorized.

- ***Bible study.***

The most important goal of follow-up is to teach the young Christian how to feed himself from the Word of God. Expose him to men who can feed him, and thus teach him “the whole counsel of God,” but remember this can never be a substitute for the person learning how to feed himself.

I remember in those early days of little Deborah’s life what a joy it was to hold her and feed her. There she was, nestled in my arms—two eyes, a nose, and a bottle. As she became older, however, we encouraged her to learn to feed herself. So important was this to us as parents that we did not even mind when she used her fingers to eat. We knew that the process of teaching her how to eat graciously would be slow and arduous. But it was also essential.

In the initial stages of follow-up, you and your pastor will have to do most of the feeding of the new babe. For many new Christians, the task of learning how to feed themselves from the Word of God is laborious. It has a tendency to appear legalistic and unfruitful. For this reason, the new Christian will often be tempted to quit trying. Realizing this temptation, you will have to work closely with him, encouraging him to stay with it.

There are many good Bible study helps on the market, but, unfortunately, there are few that

I know of that teach a person how to feed himself. The Navigators have a Bible study series, *Design for Discipleship*, the objective of which is to teach the young Christian what it means to become a disciple and to wean him from Bible study aids in the process so that eventually he can take the Bible and feed himself without any outside helps other than the Holy Spirit. Another excellent book on how to do Bible study is *Independent Bible Study* by Irving L. Jensen (Moody Press). I would recommend this for the mature Christian.

Whatever Bible study method is employed, it should include a period of time when the young Christian prepares the study on his own, and then a period of time when he meets together with a group of people who also have done the study and who share their results and learn from one another. In the early weeks of learning how to do Bible study, you will want to prepare the lesson with the new Christian. There is just no substitute for going through these growth processes step by step.

## **ENSURE LOVE AND PROTECTION**

There is one thing it is impossible to give people too much of, and that is love. People misunderstand what love is all about and imagine it to be synonymous with spoiling people. The two are in no way related. Sociologists and psychologists tell us that if a child is deprived of love in the early years of his life, it is questionable whether he will ever be able to understand what it truly means to love and be loved. One of the basic needs in life is to be loved and wanted. We need to apply the principle of TLC (Tender Loving Care) to our babes in Christ. Envelope the young Christian with love!

- ***Invite him over to your home for meals and make him feel a part of the family.***

Bob Wheeler, a carpenter by trade, was the person who led me to Christ many years ago. One of the most significant things he did was to involve me in his family life. His home was my home. I always felt welcome. I cannot recall how many times I ate at his table, but I know I

virtually ate him out of house and home! When I think of Bob, I think of 1 Corinthians 16:15, “Know the house of Stephanas, that it is the firstfruits of Achaia, and that they have *ad-dicted* themselves to the ministry of the saints.” It became so meaningful to me that my wife and I adopted it as the verse we would claim for our home.

- ***Involve him in the warmth and fellowship of the church.***

The writer of the Book of Hebrews warns, “Not forsaking the assembling of themselves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another; and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching” (Hebrews 10:25).

There is a certain chemistry that takes place in the fellowship of believers which produces an environment that is conducive for growth and stability. I can remember when Bob took me to church for the first time. His friends became my friends. The fellowship and encouragement they showed me was a major factor in my development as a Christian.

Church was where I had an opportunity to observe other believers and to adopt their lifestyle as mine. There was a great deal in my old life that had to be discarded, and a great deal of new life that had to be incorporated. That small church played a major role in my making that transition.

- ***Take him with you.***

It is written of the Lord Jesus, “And He ordained 12, that they should be with Him, and that He might send them forth to preach” (Mark 3:14). Travel together, take vacations together, play sports together, do things together. What will take place is described in Proverbs 27:17: “Iron sharpeneth iron; so a man sharpeneth the countenance of his friend.”

## **ENSURE AN ATMOSPHERE OF ACCEPTANCE**

I remember when I was growing up that one of

the things I appreciated about my father was the fact that I could always talk with him about any subject that was on my mind without fear of being misunderstood or reprimanded. The older I become the more precious this heritage becomes to me. It is something that I am working on with my own children.

Often there are things on our hearts that we would like to talk to someone about, but we are apprehensive simply because we are afraid of being misunderstood. When following up a Christian, it is essential that he feels free to share his doubts, fears, and personal problems no matter how intimate they may be, without feeling he will be condemned or rejected because of them.

Peter says “Charity (love) shall cover the multitude of sins” (1 Peter 4:8). Probably no better counsel is to be found on how to overcome the feelings of inadequacy that all of us have, particularly in our interpersonal relationships. In meeting needs of my wife, in raising my children, in helping others to mature in Christ, this feeling of inadequacy is sometimes overwhelming. But somehow it all turns out well by adding this ingredient called “love.”

The apprehension you will feel in assuming responsibility for helping a new Christian is quite natural. The application of these simple principles will help, but will not eliminate all apprehension. Stick close by the person and love him as you would love a member of your own family. God will do the rest.



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory



# EQUIPPING THE SAINTS

3/8

## Disciple's Application Guide

Student's Name \_\_\_\_\_ Group \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_  
 Subject Area \_\_\_\_\_ Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_  
 Topic \_\_\_\_\_ Commitment to Discipleship \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple's Profile	Completed	
	Yes	No
<b>Topic Notes</b>		
<i>Review Commitment to Discipleship</i>		
<b>Bible Study</b>		
<i>Complete The Return of Christ (Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<i>Write a set of Discussion Questions</i>		
<b>Personal &amp; Spiritual Management Aid</b>		
<i>Do 5 PSMA</i>		
<b>Outside Reading</b>		
<i>Bible Reading Chart</i>		
<i>Read Disciples Are Made Not Born — Chapter 8</i>		
<i>(Be Ready to Discuss)</i>		
<b>Ministry: Evangelism/Follow-Up/Discipleship</b>		
<i>Pray for a convert</i>		
<i>Pray for your disciple</i>		
<i>Meet with your disciple</i>		
<i>Complete Discipling Plan</i>		
<b>Scripture Memory</b>		
<i>Acts 1:8</i>		
<i>John 20:21</i>		
<i>Review all previous verses</i>		



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **COMMITMENT TO DISCIPLESHIP**

NOTES

### **Discipleship is Lordship**

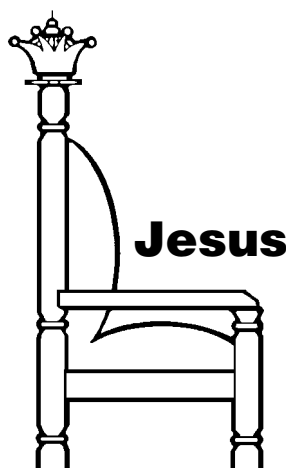
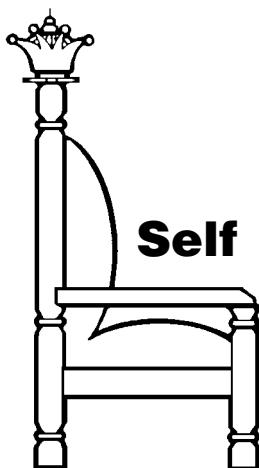
In Philippians we are told that God has exalted Jesus as Lord. The day is coming when every tongue will confess that Jesus is Lord.

*Therefore God also has highly exalted Him and given Him the name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.*

*Philippians 2:9-11*

Discipleship is making Jesus the Lord of life. This is done by an act of my will—turning over the controls of my life to Him. When Jesus is in the driver's seat of my life, He will lead me into God's perfect plan for my life.

Before a man comes to Christ, *Self* is seated upon the throne of his life. However, when a person becomes a disciple, he climbs off the throne and invites Jesus to rule, direct, and guide in every area. *Jesus* now takes the throne and assumes control of the disciple—leading him into God's will.





When Paul wrote to the Romans about this matter, he said:

*I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*

*Romans 12:1,2*

When Paul wrote this to the Romans about sacrificing, they knew exactly what he was talking about. It meant offering up something that was alive, to present it dead unto God. In fact, the word Paul used here means “to slaughter an animal.” However, Paul says it is to be a *living* sacrifice. That means that it is outwardly alive, but inwardly it is to be surrendered (dead to self) to do God’s will.

Paul speaks of the same thing when he says in Galatians,

*I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me.*

*Galatians 2:20*

This means I am physically alive but Christ is in control, and I am following God’s will in every area of my life. To be crucified means:

- The man on the cross is looking in only one direction.***
- He is not turning back.***
- He has no further plans of his own.***

***—A. W. Tozer***

In other words, my own self-life is ended and the life of Christ is all in all. This is true discipleship.

## **Prerequisites to Discipleship**

### **Count the Cost**

In one of Jesus’ parables he reminds us to count the cost before we commit ourselves to a life of discipleship. He doesn’t want us to say one thing and then do something else, but to be men and women of our word.

*And whoever does not bear his cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, does not sit down first and count the cost, whether he has enough to finish it—lest, after he has laid the foundation, and is not able to*

## **NOTES**

*finish it, all who see it begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build and was not able to finish. Or what king, going to make war against another king, does not sit down first and consider whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him who comes against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is still a great way off, he sends a delegation and asks conditions of peace.*

*Luke 14:27-32*

Out of every 100 missionary candidates, only two ever make it to the mission field, and only one of the two returns for the second term. Ninety-eight of the one hundred candidates said “yes” too quickly without counting the cost involved in becoming a missionary. When conflicting “opportunities” or obstacles arose, these candidates were not willing to complete their commitment. Jesus said in His parable that when such things happen, those who are looking from the outside at Christianity begin to mock and scorn the cause of Christ because these Christians did not live up to their word. Satan also mocks their shaky commitment and reminds them that he is still controlling large areas of their lives. Surely Satan must also mock God Himself in such cases, laughing at the indecisiveness of those whom God calls His own.

## **Evaluate Carefully**

God, therefore, is very careful to warn His children to think and evaluate thoroughly before deciding to become real disciples of Christ. Those who speak quickly and fail to live up to their word not only displease God, they also violate the Scriptures.

*Walk prudently when you go to the house of God; and draw near to hear rather than to give the sacrifice of fools, for they do not know that they do evil. Do not be rash with your mouth, and let not your heart utter anything hastily before God. For God is in heaven, and you on earth; therefore let your words be few. For a dream comes through much activity, and a fool's voice is known by his many words. When you make a vow to God, do not delay to pay it; for He has no pleasure in fools. Pay what you have vowed. It is better not to vow than to vow and not pay.*

*Ecclesiastes 5:1-5*

## **Total Submission**

*Then He said to them all, “If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.”*

*Luke 9:23*

Daily I must take up my cross and say, “No” to my selfish desires, and give my life to God’s plan and will for every area of living. We are often willing to turn over large portions of our lives to God, but Satan encourages us to hang on to some secret or *pet sin*. Because we are unwilling to give it up to God, our usefulness is limited. We are only partially submitted and that is not good enough.

*If Jesus is not Lord of all, He is not Lord at all!*

## Availability

*So he, trembling and astonished, said, “Lord, what do You want me to do?” And the Lord said to him, “Arise and go into the city, and you will be told what you must do.”*

*Acts 9:6*

*Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying: “Whom shall I send, and who will go for Us?” Then I said, “Here am I! Send me.”*

*Isaiah 6:8*

Christians often think they are available to God when they really aren’t because of financial obligations and debts. In this age of credit buying, many Christians are finding that instead of being the slaves of God, they are the slaves of their credit cards and the department stores. If God were to call them to go somewhere else for His sake, they would not be able to get unentangled from their debts for months or even years. Again, the usefulness is limited because of the unavailability.

*No one engaged in warfare entangles himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier.*

*2 Timothy 2:4*

## No Turning Back

*But Jesus said to him, “No one, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.”*

*Luke 9:62*

*...for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and has departed for Thessalonica—Crescens for Galatia, Titus for Dalmatia.*

*2 Timothy 4:10*

When a person turns back, he pushes Jesus off his life's throne. He takes back the controls himself or may even turn them over to the devil.

Demas was one who had not only committed himself to the Great Commission, he had actually become a disciple and a missionary, serving faithfully with Paul in the Gospel. However in 2 Timothy, which was written at the end of Paul's life, we find Demas has given up and left the ministry. The reason was he *loved* this present world.

No matter how long one has been a disciple or a servant of God, there is always the danger he will be led out of God's will by the enemy. Satan has always operated from the premise that *every man has a price* for which he will sell out and turn back.

## Finishing the Race

The only way a person can finish the course in victory is to keep looking straight ahead at Jesus and at the rewards He is reserving in heaven for those who fully follow Him.

*Therefore we also, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us, and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

*Hebrews 12:1,2*

## Finishers of the Race

The great heroes of faith in Hebrews 11 understood this vital principle. Many of them died in faith before they could see God's promises fulfilled in this life. Yet they did not turn back, for their eyes were fixed in heaven.

*These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them, embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For those who say such things declare plainly that they seek a homeland. And truly if they had called to mind that country from which they had come out, they would have had opportunity to return. But now they desire a better, that is, a heavenly country. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for He has prepared a city for them.*

*Hebrews 11:13-16*

## One Master

## NOTES

*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.*

*Matthew 6:24*

God must have total control. We cannot serve two masters or *have the best of both worlds*. We spent a whole lesson on this because it is so important.

## Faith or Trust

*Delight yourself also in the Lord, And He shall give you the desires of your heart.. Commit your way to the LORD, Trust also in Him, And He shall bring it to pass.*

*Psalms 37:4,5*

*But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.*

*Hebrews 11:6*

Discipleship means turning your life over to God and then trusting His sovereignty to provide for every situation.

## Obedience

*He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me. And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.*

*John 14:21*

When God makes known His will for me I must set about to *do* it with all my heart and soul.

## Areas of Commitment

### Self

*I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me.*

*Galatians 2:20*

We have spent a lot of time on this subject in various other lessons so we won't cover the subject in depth in this lesson. However, I do want you to ask yourself several questions:

- ***Am I really dead?***
- ***Can God do anything He pleases in and through my life?***
- ***Am I exchanging my life for the fulfilling of the Great Commission?***

## Reputation

*Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, taking the form of a servant, and coming in the likeness of men.*

*Philippians 2:5-7*

Many people work their whole life to establish a reputation that will enhance their self worth. They want the world to know that they are:

- ***Rich***
- ***Powerful***
- ***Intelligent***
- ***Famous***
- ***Great***
- ***Successful***
- ***Beautiful***

But all of these qualities are so transient. They are only good during this life and often they disappear long before this life ends. Even more devastating is the fact that people who are concentrating on these temporal qualities of life often feel *ashamed* of being Christians since Christianity somehow does not enhance a sophisticated lifestyle and reputation.

Ask yourself:

- ***Am I willing to be openly identified as a child of God, or am I a secret Christian?***
- ***Am I more concerned about what people think of me or what God thinks?***

## Possessions

*Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.*

*Matthew 6:19-21*

This was the message Jesus tried to communicate to the rich young ruler. His possessions kept him from God's best for his life. Not only was he robbing himself in this life but also in the life to come.

We need to ask ourselves:

- ***Have I turned over my possessions to God?***
- ***Is there anything which I have that I would be unwilling for God to take away if He should choose?***

## Money

*For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*

*1 Timothy 6:10*

From this passage we must understand that it is not money, but rather the *love* of money which is the root of all evil. Greed can cause people to destroy both themselves and those they love, and even after they have attained great wealth, they still are unsatisfied. Someone once asked a multi-millionaire which of his million dollar achievements had really satisfied him and made him fulfilled. He replied, "The next one!"

God is the only one who gives us the ability to obtain wealth. We must recognize this and not begin to think that we have become rich by our own power.

*...then you say in your heart, "My power and the might of my hand have gained me this wealth." And you shall remember the LORD your God, for it is He who gives you power to get wealth, that He may establish His covenant which He swore to your fathers, as it is this day.*

*Deuteronomy 8:17,18*

God has promised to care for our physical needs, but He has not promised to make all of us rich. God does want us to learn to rest in Him and trust Him with our money whether it is a great fortune or only a small sum.

Paul reminded Timothy:

*But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. But those who*

*desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition.*

*1 Timothy 6:6-9*

We need to ask ourselves:

- ***Does my money bring me closer to God or drive me away from Him?***
- ***Do I set aside God's portion first or last when I receive my income?***
- ***Do I return to God at least a tithe?***

## Education

*Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*

*2 Timothy 2:15*

It is a tragedy how many students *don't have time* for God in their busy schedules. Although they feel called by God to study academically, they somehow ignore God's call to study His Word and worship Him too. God will never call us to a place where we don't have time to put His kingdom first since He commanded us to do it.

We need to ask ourselves:

- ***Am I a student or a Christian first?***
- ***Will my studies keep me from my walk with God or my ministry?***
- ***Do I place the same priority on my study of the Scriptures as I do on my schoolwork?***

## Marriage

*And the LORD God said, "It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him." Out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the air, and brought them to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called each living creature, that was its name. So Adam gave names to all cattle, to the birds of the air, and to every beast of the field. But for Adam there was not found a helper comparable to him. And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall on Adam, and he slept; and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh in its place. Then the rib which the LORD God had taken from man He made into a woman, and He brought her to*



*the man. And Adam said: "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man." Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.*

*Genesis 2:18-24*

Next to receiving Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour, the choice of a life partner is the most important decision one will ever make. Marriage can either multiply and enhance your effectiveness or it can keep you from being used as God intended. Marriage can be a *little bit of heaven on earth* or it can be a foretaste of hell. In either case, marriage is for keeps and cannot be dissolved in the eyes of God. It is therefore a very crucial decision which will affect your entire life, and Satan will do all within his power to see you select the wrong partner.

Ask yourself:

- ***Would I marry a non-Christian knowing that God commands Christians not to be unequally yoked with unbelievers?***

***Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness?***

***2 Corinthians 6:14***

- ***Am I seeking God's will as to whether or not He wants me to marry, and if so, am I willing to leave the choice of a partner to Him?***
- ***Will I take back the Lordship of Christ in this area of my life?***

## Vocation

*Who has saved us and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before time began,*

***2 Timothy 1:9***

*I, therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you to have a walk worthy of the calling with which you were called,*

***Ephesians 4:1***

When God calls a person to a certain profession, it is not primarily because of the status or wealth it holds, but because He wants the person to be a witness for Him in that job. Satan constantly tries to

sidetrack people by getting them over-busy with their work, or by convincing them that their colleagues are *too closed* and cannot be reached. However, if God has truly led you into that profession, He will make it possible for you to be a witness. If you find you cannot, it would be better to leave and get another job than to stay where you are and be sterile for the cause of Christ.

We need to ask:

- ***Am I willing to let God choose my vocation?***
- ***Will I use my vocation as a means to fulfill the Great Commission?***
- ***Will my vocation be so demanding that I will have to put God second in life?***

## Friends

*A friend loves at all times, and a brother is born for adversity.*

*Proverbs 17:17*

True friends love you at all times and in all circumstances. One of the great blessings of the Christian life is the Christian friends the Lord gives. These friends not only love you with human, brotherly love, they can also be channels of God's love to you.

However, there are those who are not true friends at all. The wrong friends may use you or be a bad influence upon you. Just as God wants to give you a set of friends, Satan is also very eager to give you his set of friends.

*He who walks with wise men will be wise, but the companion of fools will be destroyed.*

*Proverbs 13:20*

How would you answer the following questions?

- ***Do my friends help or hinder my relationship with God?***
- ***Do I put my friends above God in priority?***

## Leisure Time

*...redeeming the time, because the days are evil.*

*Ephesians 5:16*

Rest and recreation are very important parts of our lives. They are necessary if we are to function effectively and maintain our physical and mental health. However, just as disciples are required to commit all other parts of their lives to Christ, leisure time must be under His

Lordship as well. Taking a vacation does not mean taking a vacation *from* God, but with God. In our leisure, as well as in our work, God must be our chief priority.

- ***Does God have His tithe of 2.4 hours every day of my life?***
- ***Do I take holidays from God or with God?***
- ***Do I consider using my leave-time from work for Christian renewal, such as a Christian camp or conference?***
- ***When on vacation, do I still seek to build His Kingdom by witnessing to others?***

## Plans

*Trust in the LORD with all your heart, and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct your paths.*

*Proverbs 3:5,6*

Planning is meant to be a help to us in organizing our time, but to many people it becomes a source of frustration and defeat. When Christ is not Lord of our plans and allowed to overrule them at His pleasure, we become enslaved to them. We grow rigid and inflexible, pushing to get our plans accomplished rather than prayerfully allowing God to use or change our plans.

*Come now, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, spend a year there, buy and sell, and make a profit"; whereas you do not know what will happen tomorrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapor that appears for a little time and then vanishes away. Instead you ought to say, "If the Lord wills, we shall live and do this or that."*

*James 4:13-15*

Evaluate your current plans by asking:

- ***Are they mine or God's?***
- ***Are they built around God's will?***
- ***Are they built around the fulfilling of the Great Commission?***
- ***Are they rigid and inflexible or available to God to change?***

If we were to ask your closest friends to evaluate you in these various areas of your life, who would they say controls these areas of your life, you or God?

If Jesus is not Lord, surrender these areas to God in a special act of dedication. Let him have control over every area of life.



## ***EQUIPPING THE SAINTS***

# **BIBLE STUDY: THE RETURN OF CHRIST**

In the midst of the pessimism, gloom, and frustration of this present hour, there is one bright beacon light of hope, and that is the promise of Jesus Christ: "If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again" (John 14:3).

—Billy Graham\*

Since the time of the first Christians, the return of Christ has been the hope of every believer. Every generation has wondered, "Will it be soon?"

The return of Christ is mentioned by every New Testament writer, and these writers refer to it over 300 times in twenty different books.

**VERSES Pg. 792**

## **The Promise of His Return**

1. Read John 14:2,3. What did Jesus promise His disciples? (Note the three parts of the promise).

---

---

---

---

2. After Jesus ascended, how did the two angels describe His promised return? Acts 1:9-11

---

---

3. What does Jesus say about His return in the following verses?

Matthew 16:27 \_\_\_\_\_

Matthew 24:27 \_\_\_\_\_

Mark 13:26,27 \_\_\_\_\_

Luke 12:40 \_\_\_\_\_

4. How does Paul refer to the return of Christ in each chapter of his first letter to the Thessalonians?

1 Thessalonians 1:9,10 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 2:19 \_\_\_\_\_

\*From *World Aflame* (New York: Doubleday, 1965), page 202.

1 Thessalonians 3:12,13 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 4:16-18 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 5:2-6 \_\_\_\_\_

## Conditions Preceding His Return

5. In Matthew 24 and 25 Jesus gives many details and warnings about His return. The following questions are taken from chapter 24.

a. What events will take place on the earth before He comes again? Verses 6,7 \_\_\_\_\_

b. In spite of widespread evil, what will true Christians be doing? Verses 12-14 \_\_\_\_\_

c. How should you respond if someone told you Christ had returned and was performing great miracles in some city? Verses 23-26 \_\_\_\_\_

d. What signs will be seen in the skies? Verse 29 \_\_\_\_\_

e. Who knows the exact time of Christ's return? Verse 36 \_\_\_\_\_

f. What will people be doing? (Compare verses 37-39 with Genesis 6:5 and 6:11-13.) \_\_\_\_\_

6. What will characterize people living in the last days?

1 Timothy 4:1,2 \_\_\_\_\_

2 Timothy 3:1-5 \_\_\_\_\_

7. What ideas will be popular in the last days?

2 Peter 3:3,4 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Thessalonians 5:3 \_\_\_\_\_

Do you see any of these teachings in the world today? Explain. \_\_\_\_\_

## Events at His Return

There are many different ideas concerning the order of events at Christ's return. This study seeks to identify the major events, but not to establish their order.

8. Read 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18.

a. List the events that will take place when Christ comes. Verses 16,17 \_\_\_\_\_

b. How long will you be with Him? Verse 17 \_\_\_\_\_

c. What should you do with these truths? Verse 18 \_\_\_\_\_

9. At Christ's coming, what will happen to believers?

1 Corinthians 15:22,23 \_\_\_\_\_

Philippians 3:20,21 \_\_\_\_\_

Colossians 3:4 \_\_\_\_\_

1 John 3:2 \_\_\_\_\_

10. From 1 Corinthians 15:42-44, compare your earthly and heavenly body.

Earthly	Heavenly

11. Read 2 Thessalonians 1:6-10.

a. What will Christ's return mean for unbelievers? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. For believers? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

12. What else will happen to believers at Christ's return? \_\_\_\_\_

2 Corinthians 5:10 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

1 Corinthians 4:5 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

The judgment of believers' works has nothing to do with eternal salvation. It is a time of reward for service, or loss of reward. For the judgment of unbelievers read Revelation 20:12-15.

## **What His Return Means To You**

13. What will it be like in the presence of God? Revelation 21:4 \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

Who will be there? Revelation 5:9 \_\_\_\_\_

14. What attitudes should you have toward Christ's return? \_\_\_\_\_

2 Timothy 4:8 \_\_\_\_\_

James 5:7,8 \_\_\_\_\_

1 Peter 1:13 \_\_\_\_\_

15. Compare 2 Peter 3:10-12 with 1 John 3:2,3, and write a short paragraph of the effect Christ's return should have on you. \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

16. Choose one of the passages you used in question 14 or 15 and make the following personal application.

a. What is the general command? \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_

b. How does this apply to you? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

c. What specific action are you going to take as a result of this command? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

d. How will you check up on yourself? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

17. Compare Matthew 24:14 with 2 Peter 3:9. What reason can you see for Christ to delay his return? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

18. Read Mark 13:33,37. \_\_\_\_\_

a. What does Jesus exhort you to do? \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

b. After meditating on this admonition, write down four or five specific ways you can practice it in your life. \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

19. If you live in obedience and fellowship with Him now, what will be true of you when He comes?  
1 John 2:28 \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_



## Remember These Points:

Review the chapter subtopics and use them as an outline to write your own summary of the chapter. \_\_\_\_\_

[illegible]



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Bible Study Discussion Outline**

Lesson \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

Lesson Objective

Time	Introduction	
	Prayer	
	Discussion Question	Notes
	<b>Heading Topic I:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic II:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	

Time	Discussion Question	Notes
	<b>Heading Topic III:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic IV:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Heading Topic V:</b>	
	Discovery	
	Understanding	
	Correlation	
	Application	
	Summary	
	<b>Conclusion</b>	
	<b>Prayer</b>	



## Chapter 8

# HOW TO TRAIN A DISCIPLE IMPARTING THE BASICS

As the disciple begins his disciple-making ministry, he finds before him a five-fold objective elaborated by the Apostle Paul in 1 Thessalonians 1:5-10.

• ***Solid decisions for Christ:*** “For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in prayer, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake” (verse 5). When Paul preached the Gospel to the Thessalonians, the Word was proclaimed with power. It was accompanied by the Holy Spirit, and the result was that the people who came to Christ were filled with much assurance—they made solid decisions for Christ.

• ***Disciples:*** “And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the Word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost” (verse 6). This is a rather useful definition of disciple: one who is a follower of us and of the Lord. People learn how to follow the Lord by following the Lord’s people. Paul was able to disciple the Thessalonians because they were willing to follow him. Because Paul’s life was consistent with the Scriptures and the leading of God, the Thessalonians became followers of the Lord as well.

• ***Pacesetters:*** “So that ye were examples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia” (verse 7). The Thessalonians became a showcase for what it meant to be a Christian. Their lives were examples to the rest of the people in Greece.

• ***Reproduction:*** “For from you sounded out the Word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and

Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not speak any thing” (verse 8). Wherever Paul went, the response was, “We know exactly what you are talking about, for we met some of those Christians from Thessalonica.” Paul’s ministry to the Thessalonians was such that their immediate response was to share the Gospel with others.

• ***Commitment:*** “Ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God; and to wait for His Son from heaven” (verses 9,10). Notice what was involved:

- a turning *from* idolatry
- a turning *to* the true God
- service, not passive profession of faith
- expectation of Christ’s glorious return

Thus far we have seen what is involved in bringing men to Christ and then following them up as new Christians. Now, what is involved in bringing people from the initial stages of follow-up to discipleship? We can call this the training process.

### THE TRAINING PROCESS

The dictionary defines train as “to direct the growth of; to form by instruction; discipline and drill; to form by bending; pruning, such as directing the growth of a plant.”

In training we want to help people maximize their potential for Jesus Christ. In the training process, it must be remembered that the trainer cannot take upon himself the work of the Holy Spirit. He cannot reach down inside a man and

change his sense of values—though often he wishes he could when he meets people who appear to be giving their lives to the wrong things, and whose sense of values seems to be warped.

All the trainer can do is help a man become what he wants to be. If a man does not see things from God's point of view, if he does not surrender his life to Jesus as Lord, if he is unwilling to pay the price of being Christ's man, there is very little that can be done to disciple him. This is why the major part of this book is devoted to bringing the basic issues of life into focus. If a person is committed to Jesus Christ and highly motivated to do His will, the training process becomes simple, even enjoyable.

In the final analysis, the trainer can only contribute to a person's development in two areas: (1) the giving of time, and (2) the opportunity to learn. All other factors conducive to change and growth—a feeling of personal responsibility, willingness to work sacrificially, attitudes of teachability and flexibility, native intelligence—are either inherited or controlled by the man himself.

The trainer, therefore, must yield the total responsibility for change to the person he is training. He can, however, provide the person with a variety of training techniques which he can use for his own self-development. The trainer, then, simply assumes the role of a guide and stimulus for the person, enabling him to obtain his own goals and objectives.

There are many tools, techniques, and methods available in training people to become disciples. These should be clearly distinguished from principles, which have universal application. For example, Jesus said "to those Jews which believed on Him, 'If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed'" (John 8:31). One of the principles of discipleship is to "continue in the Word." The various courses in Bible study and Scripture memory that are available are merely methods to help people continue in the Word. The fledgling disciple may be looking to you as the trainer, for help in acquiring the best

methods, but methodology should never be the primary goal and objective in the disciple-making process.

In working with a young Christian, you might want to begin by asking him, "What is a disciple?" After he plays around with various positions, you might further suggest, "Why don't we do a study in John's Gospel during this next week to see what it says?"

A week later you get together with him and go over what John's Gospel says a disciple is. Then you ask your man, "Would you like to be a disciple?" Assuming his answer is yes, take the idea mentioned in John 8:31 about continuing in the Word and ask him to spend the next week thinking through on how he can continue in the Word. Later, you will suggest various ways in which a person can get into the Word of God, but at this point don't tell your man what they are—let him discover them for himself.

At your next meeting, ask him to share with you the various ways one can get into the Word of God. After going over the things that he has discovered on his own, for his next assignment ask him to spend a week praying through what the Lord would have him do in each of these areas that he has listed. For example, he might have suggested Bible study, hearing the Word, reading the Word, and Scripture memory. His objective now is to find out what the Lord would have him to do in each of these areas.

The chances are that when you get together again, you will discover that the goals he has set for himself in these areas are far higher than any goals you would set for him. One of your jobs, therefore, will be to help him modify and keep realistic his own personal objectives. Whatever these objectives may be, they are his idea, the product of his prayerfully determining God's will for his life.

Help your man discover the principles of discipleship for himself through his study of the Word and make sure that the applications he makes from these principles are his own.

As suggested in the chapter on follow-up, this type of individual instruction and coaching can only be done effectively on a one-to-one basis. Fellowship and group teaching will play a strategic role in augmenting the man-to-man ministry, but nothing can take the place of personal attention.

## What Are the Basics?

A few years ago I was meeting with a person on a one-to-one basis, helping him to disciple his man. As we talked about what his man needed, the question arose, “What are the absolute essentials that must be present in a man’s life in order to consider him a disciple?” After battling this back and forth for awhile, we decided that we would do some personal study on it and discuss our findings.

When we next met, we listed all the qualities we wanted to see in the person’s life. By the time we were through, we had so many things on paper, it looked like a grocery list! We then decided that we had to make a distinction between the things we would like to see built into his life and those qualities that we felt were absolutely essential to a disciple.

We went back to work on the assignment once more, and came up with the same basics that a little illustration used by the Navigators (called the “Wheel”) emphasizes. The Wheel is an illustration of the Christ-centered, Spirit-filled Christian walking in obedience.

### The Hub of the Wheel

The hub of the Wheel is Jesus Christ. He is the center of everything. Paul wrote, “I am crucified with Christ, nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me” (Galatians 2:20).

The hub of the wheel does at least two things—it provides the power that moves the wheel, and it also gives direction for the wheel. This is the role that Jesus Christ plays in the life of the believer.



I remember once as a child watching a buddy of mine roll a spare car tire down a hill. As it got out of control, it rolled through people’s yards, knocked down some flowers, hit a porch, bounced up, knocked over some Coke bottles, and finally landed in the neighbor’s hedge. The problem with the tire was there was no direction given to it. Christ serving as the hub in the life of the Christian provides him with direction. Without Christ’s direction, we are constantly in trouble, bumping into people, getting ourselves into difficulties, and causing damage.

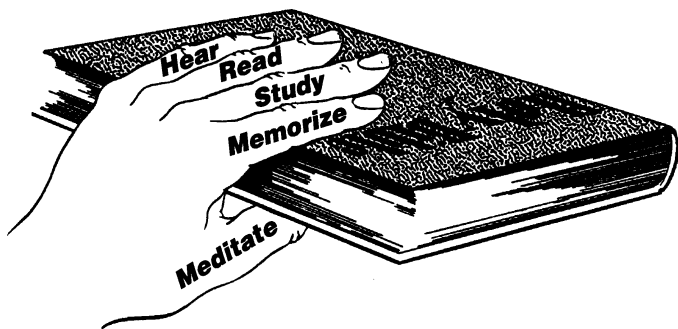
## THE SPOKES OF THE WHEEL

### • The Word

The foundation spoke for the wheel is God’s Word. Scripture says, “Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in Psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord” (Colossians 3:16).

Dawson Trotman, founder of the Navigators, developed an illustration on how the Word can be implemented in the Christian life. There are five main ways: hearing, reading, studying, memorizing, and meditating. All five must be functioning if one is to have a firm grasp on the Word.

**Hear**—help your man develop a regular hearing program. Suggest that he take notes in church as the pastor preaches. After the worship service he can compare notes with others,



talk about what was said, and seek ways to apply it. His pastor will probably be so startled to see him taking notes in church that he will have a coronary right there in the pulpit, but I am sure that he will recover from it and be encouraged to know that someone is giving such rapt attention to the Scriptures.

**Read**—encourage your disciple to adopt a plan for reading through the Scriptures once a year. By reading approximately three chapters a day, he can get through the Bible in the course of a year. There are many reading programs on the market, and you or his pastor can help him in locating one that will meet his needs. Reading through the Bible once a year will give him a panoramic view of the Scriptures. It will acquaint him with how God has worked through the ages.

“Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth...” (2 Timothy 2:15). Bible study is the “meat and potatoes” of delving into the Word of God. There are five principles that all Bible studies should have irrespective of what method is employed. They are:

**Original investigation**—the disciple and the Holy Spirit get together in the Word of God, and He assumes the role of instructor. The disciple may want to refer to Bible study aids, but this is to be done only after he has completed his own original investigation.

**Consistency and system**—consistency meaning not a hit and miss program where he studies a portion one week and then misses three months before studying another portion for a week; system meaning he has a plan of attack

rather than approaching the Scriptures in a haphazard fashion.

**Written reproduction**—the disciple writes his thoughts from the Bible study. Somebody once said, “Pale ink is better than the most retentive mind.” All of us have had the unfortunate experience of losing a thought that we got from the Word simply because we failed to write it down.

**Pass-on-able**—Remember, your objective is to have a continuing ministry of disciple-making “unto the third and fourth generations.” A friend of mine was sharing his Bible study methodology which included the use of several critical commentaries, Greek and Hebrew texts—all incorporated into a rather elaborate approach. It was an impressive method he was using, but it was probably a trifle deficient in its “pass-on-ability.”

**Application**—the Bible was not given primarily to increase our knowledge, but to change our lives. As Dr. Howard Hendricks, a professor at Dallas Theological Seminary says, “Interpretation without application is abortion.” In Bible study, we not only try to find out what it says, but also what it says to us.

You might find that answering the following questions on a passage provides a useful method of Bible study:

**What does it say? Analyze the passage** (either a paragraph or a chapter) verse by verse, jotting down any cross-references that come to mind. For example, if you were studying 1 Timothy 3:16, a possible cross reference would be 2 Peter 1:21. Then list any observations or thoughts you might have on the passage.

**What does it say that I do not understand?** Write down all the problems that you have with the passage. When I first began Bible study, I thought that the fewer problems I had, the better I understood the passage. The more I study the Scriptures, the more I realize that the converse is true. The deeper I probe into the passage, the more problems I have—that is, the more things I realize I do not understand. Some of the questions you have will be an-

swered in the course of your Bible study, some will be answered as you talk with others about it, and some may never fully be answered.

**What does it say in summary or outline?**

Either outline the chapter, giving its major divisions, or write a summary of the chapter. If you choose to write a summary, be careful that it does not become more wordy than the passage itself. Some have found it very helpful to apply both techniques—that is, to list the major divisions and then write a summary under each.

**What does it say to me?** Write your personal application using this form:

- (a) state the problem;
- (b) give a specific example of the problem just stated;
- (c) indicate the solution the Spirit of God would have you apply;
- (d) outline the specific steps you plan to take in applying the solution.

Be careful to use only the personal pronouns, *I, me, my, mine*. Stay away from pronouns such as *we* and *us*. Remember, it is not *our* problem; it is *my* problem.

**Memorize**—probably no method of Scripture intake pays higher dividends for the time invested than Scripture memory. I have been memorizing the Scriptures on a consistent basis for a number of years now, and I regard it as being an extremely rewarding discipline, though at times demanding and exacting. Memorizing the verse itself is only a small portion of the task. Reviewing it a sufficient number of times so that you do not lose it constitutes most of the work.

There are many excellent Scripture memory programs on the market, and I am sure your pastor can help you locate one that can satisfactorily meet your needs. One that I have found most useful is *The Topical Memory System* published by The Navigators. The reason I suggest it is the program is designed to teach you *how* to memorize Scriptures on your own.

**Meditate**—this is the thumb in the Hand illustration and finds its application with the other four fingers. You hear the Word and meditate on it, read the Word and meditate on it, study and meditate, memorize and meditate. Meditation drives the passage home, fixes it in the mind, and helps you formulate application.

If I am only hearing the Word of God and meditating on it, it's like trying to hold the Bible with one finger and a thumb; I have a poor grasp of it. If, however, I am hearing and reading the Word of God while meditating on it, I have a slightly better grasp, though not yet sufficient. As I implement each of the various means of Scripture, I have an increasingly stronger grip on the sword of the Spirit. It is not until I have all five fingers in operation that I have a truly good grip on the Word of God.

• **Prayer**

This spoke lies opposite to the Word of God and plays a balancing role with the Word in the Christian life. The person who is strong in the Word but weak in prayer is like a skeleton; there is no flesh on it. The person who is strong in prayer but weak in the Word is like a fleshy person with no skeleton—just like a jellyfish. The Word and prayer together form the proper balance in the Christian's life.

Prayer does not require a great deal of methodology; it is simply conversing with God. But because of its strategic role in the Christian life, the devil does his utmost to discourage its practice. If you are weak in prayer, get yourself a prayer partner, somebody who will pray with you at regular, appointed times. I remember when in college I realized my weakness in this area, and so I talked a buddy of mine into praying every week with me. We would meet in an empty dorm room at 11:00 in the morning and pray until 4:00 in the afternoon. I cannot remember all the things we prayed for, but I do know that it was extremely profitable exercise to build the habit of prayer into my life.

One of the most motivating little booklets that I have read on the subject of prayer is E. M.



Bounds' *Power Through Prayer*. I would highly recommend it for your reading and application.

## • Witnessing

Another hallmark of a disciple is that witnessing is an integral part of his life. The last words of the Lord Jesus to His disciples were "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth" (Acts 1:8). Witnessing is one of those tasks we try to avoid, but after we get into a witnessing situation, the thrill and excitement is such that we wonder why we hesitated in the first place.

Probably one of the greatest fears people have in witnessing is the fear of being rejected. "He doesn't want to listen to me," we rationalize. "He is probably busy and preoccupied with something else. Anyway, he might become offended and rebuke me for talking with him about spiritual matters." Yet, when, if ever, have you spoken to somebody about the Lord Jesus and found him to be offended? Usually people are very warm and eager to talk about spiritual matters.

Several years ago I was helping a young man who was extremely reluctant to witness. He was involved in beginning a student ministry, so I asked him, "Joe, how many students on campus do you know personally? By that I mean when they see you they know you by name."

After having been there for a couple of months, he knew only two or three men.

I said, "Joe, in the next four weeks, I want you to get to know as many students on campus as you can. Let's set our goal for 50 students. You don't have to witness to them. You don't have to tell them you're a Christian. All you have to do is get to know them. Stop by their rooms and chat with them. Play Ping Pong with them. Go to athletic events with them. Go to meals together. Do anything you want, but get to know

50 men so that one month from today, when I return, you can introduce me to each one of them by name."

One month later I returned to visit Joe on the campus and found that he had led six men to Christ. We didn't talk about whether he had gotten to know 50 people. We didn't have to. He had discovered for himself that as he became friends with "the publicans and sinners" the Lord naturally provided opportunities for him to share his faith. Witnessing, then, begins by establishing friendships with non-Christians. As these friendships mature, the Holy Spirit will provide opportunities to witness.

As you train your disciple, take him into your environment for his witnessing experiences. Introduce him to your non-Christian friends, and let him watch you in action as you share your faith. Then as he gains confidence, he will feel comfortable doing the same thing with his own non-Christian friends.

I remember another occasion when working with students on campus that I had a young man on my team who was very apprehensive about talking to others about Christ. I could get Bill to do Bible study and Scripture memory, but I just could not get him to witness.

After several months of persuasion, Bill reluctantly agreed to join me in sharing the Gospel with somebody as long as he did not have to do any talking. We went out and talked to a friend of mine about the Lord. We repeated this a number of times with different people until eventually Bill gained enough confidence to join in the conversation. As the weeks passed, he became more and more at ease, and soon the time came for him to share the Gospel with one of his buddies. I went along simply as an observer; this time he was going to do all the talking.

We got to Ron's room and chatted for a few minutes, and then Bill changed the topic of conversation and began sharing the Gospel. As I listened, I realized to my horror that Bill was doing everything wrong. His approach was back-

wards. He was using all the wrong verses. He broke every “rule” in the book! It was so bad that I had to bite my tongue to keep myself from butting into the conversation and “rescuing” him.

After what seemed to me to be several long and very embarrassing minutes, Bill said, “Well, Ron, do you want to receive Christ or not?”

“Boy, I sure do,” came the unexpected reply.

As I knelt there beside Ron’s bed, I felt as if I were in a dream. I simply could not believe my ears. Ron had just prayed and received Christ! And as Bill followed him up in the subsequent months, Ron proved to be a disciple in his own right.

What a lesson the Holy Spirit taught me. Evangelism is God’s work—not man’s. And the Holy Spirit will take the most feeble efforts of people and use them to bring Christ into the seeking heart.

### • Fellowship

In the next chapter, we will talk about the development of people’s gifts and their use in the Body. Fellowship around the Word in prayer, with Christ as the center, is a very important part in the Christian life. Draw your disciple into the fellowship of like-minded brothers and sisters who can help edify him. A great deal need not be said here about fellowship, for it plays a large role in the average Christian’s life—so much that if we are not careful it will become disproportionately large in relation to the rest of the “spokes.”

Another thing that can be said of the spokes is that they provide the only contact that the hub has with the rim. The Christian is in contact with Jesus Christ through the spokes. Two of them, the Word and prayer, deal with intake and two of them, witnessing and fellowship, deal with output. Someone said, “If your output exceeds intake, then your upkeep becomes your downfall.” This very clearly expresses the im-

portance of balance in the Christian life.

## THE RIM OF THE WHEEL

Jesus said, “He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me; and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.” (John 14:21). Obedience is the outgrowth of a disciple’s life. It is this life of obedience that is most visible to the world.

A young man from India was studying at one of our universities, and another student witnessed to him about the claims of Christ. The Indian had observed how Christians were living and his response was, “What you Christians are speaks so loudly that I cannot hear what you are saying.” These Christians did not walk their talk.

Just as the spokes provide the only contact that the rim has with the hub, so the rim is the only contact that Jesus Christ has with the world. The only Christ that the non-believing world can see is the Christ inside each Christian. When people look at you, do they see Christ reflected in your life?

In addition to using the Wheel illustration to help you train your man, you might want to develop some areas of character, such as purity of life, faith, love, and integrity. However we must constantly remind ourselves that the implementation of our training objectives must be done in synchronization with our man’s needs.

On the basis of these needs, develop a plan. Always ask yourself three questions: (1) What does he need? (2) How can he get it? (3) How will I know when he has it? These three questions can be asked in a variety of ways: for instance: (1) Where am I going? (2) How am I going to get there? (3) How will I know when I have arrived? Whatever way you wish to phrase them, always ask the same three questions.

Let’s apply this plan to a specific issue: faith. The answer to question 1 is *faith*. Question 2,

however, is far more difficult, particularly in a subjective area like faith. Here you will need some creative thinking. There might be some books you will like to have him read that would build his faith. You certainly will want to include prayer in your plan, both on your part and on his. Have him memorize some verses on the subject of faith. Help him in a guided experience by choosing some area in his life where he can really trust God—maybe in the financial realm, or for another man with whom he can work. As you plan, ask God for a sanctified imagination!

Question 3 is probably the most difficult since it has to do with evaluating. Without it, however, you will never know if and when you have reached your objective. Whatever plan you incorporate, it should have built into it some measuring technique that will let you know the degree to which you have accomplished your goal.

The plan that you develop for each area you want to work on with your man should be a very flexible thing. The temptation to rigidly apply it should be steadfastly resisted. Whatever plan you develop, keep it to yourself so as to create as much as possible an atmosphere of spontaneity. Do not form the man to the plan, but rather form the plan to the man.

## **HELPING HIM TO TRANSMIT TO OTHERS**

The training process does not merely consist of sharing information. Rather, it involves helping people with the “how to” of discipleship so that they can implement a vision. With this in mind, at the earliest possible opportunity encourage your disciple to begin discipling another. This will do several things for him.

- ***It will solidify his own convictions.***

More often than not when the disciple begins relating to another the truths of Christianity, he is asked penetrating questions. His forma-

tion of answers tends to seal the truths to his own heart as well as help the other person.

- ***It provides a laboratory for his own growth.***

As he builds into the life of another man, he has the opportunity to see whether what he himself does is applicable to others.

- ***It makes him teachable and eager to learn.***

With his own man asking awkward questions, it will make him all the more desirous to learn more himself. A friend of mine was teaching artillery at Ft. Bliss, Oklahoma, just after the Korean War. The young officers in his classroom were inattentive and frequently fell asleep in the middle of his lectures. Several years later, he found himself teaching the same subject at Ft. Bliss, this time in the middle of the Vietnam War. None of the men in his class were inattentive, none fell asleep, everyone was asking questions and giving him undivided attention. The reason for the marked contrast is quite simple. In the latter case there was a war going on, and the men knew that as soon as they finished their instruction, they would be shipped over to Vietnam to fight. For the first group, the war was already over.

## **THINGS TO REMEMBER IN DISCIPLING MEN**

There is so much involved in the training process that it would take several volumes to treat the subject in a comprehensive way. It is my prayer, however, that this chapter will act as a catalyst in your own mind and cause you to do some experimenting. There are some common sense “do’s and don’ts” that are applicable in any interpersonal relationship. Here are a few of the more obvious ones for you to apply in your disciple-making ministry.

- ***Remember he belongs to God.***

It is God's ministry, and God must do the building in his life. All you can ever hope to be is a tool in God's hands. "Except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain that build it: except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain" (Psalms 127:1).

• ***He must know that you believe in him and that you have confidence in him.***

Don't ever give him a job then take it away from him.

• ***Do not allow him to become dependent upon you.***

Train him with independence in mind. Your job is to help him learn from God. Don't tie him to your apron strings.

• ***Allow him the freedom to fail.***

In the business world, many executives learn more through their failures than through their successes; and yet, the greatest fear that most people have is the fear of failure. Let your man know that he can fail without fear of rejection from you.

• ***Teach him how to evaluate men.***

Jesus did not rush into the choosing of the Twelve. His choice of disciples took place when He was into His ministry. Paul says, "Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins; keep thyself pure" (1 Timothy 5:22).

• ***Seek to instill confidence.***

A man must learn to believe in himself. I am crucified with Christ, nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me (Galatians 2:20). In this verse we see two "I's"—the crucified "I" and the resurrected "I." In training we often work hard at crucifying the "old I" but spend little time in helping a man

resurrect the "new I" in Christ. We must have "no confidence in the flesh," but at the same time believe that, "I can do all things through Christ."

## **SUMMARY**

Making disciples takes time. It cannot be done through a series of lectures and a training seminar in the church, nor can it be done by reading a book. It cannot be rushed. One of the dominant characteristics of our modern culture is our ability and desire to mass-produce. We mass-produce everything—cars, appliances, furniture, pots and pans, and household gadgets. We have even become proficient in mass-producing houses! It is so easy to take this "mass-produced mentality" and apply it to disciple-making. It cannot be done. Disciples are made, not mass-produced. Each one is molded and fashioned individually by the Spirit of God. How long it takes is a matter of conjecture and varies from person to person, depending to a large degree on where they are when they begin the training process. But one thing is certain; it does take time. The Lord Jesus began with 12 monotheistic, God-fearing men, who came from reasonably good homes. He devoted Himself full-time to their training and development. He was a Master at the art of training, and yet it took Him three full years. We can hardly hope to do it in less.



## Passage



## Application



Area	✓	Description	Comments
Scripture Memory: Current			
Scripture Memory: Back			
Scripture Memory: New Verses			
Bible Reading			
Bible Study			
Prayer			
Witnessing			
Follow Up			
Exercise			



Daily Schedule		Priority	Do List	Errands & Projects
8				
8:30				
9				
9:30				
10				
10:30				
11				
12				
1				
1:30			Write	
2				
3				
4			Phone	
5				
6				
7			See	
8				



## **OUTSIDE READING ASSIGNMENT**

# **A ONE YEAR BIBLE READING PROGRAM**

**Used by Permission**

# BIBLE READING PROGRAM

## Introduction

The Bible is God's revealed Word to men. Therefore, it is of utmost importance to discover what it says and obey it!

Many Christians confine their Bible reading to certain favorite portions and only when they feel the need. But the Scriptures declare, "The whole Bible was given by inspiration from God and is useful to teach us what is true and to make us realize what is wrong in our lives; it straightens us out and helps us do what is right. It is God's way of making us well-prepared at every point, fully equipped to do good to everyone" (2 Timothy 3:16,17, Living Bible).

Want to know a secret of the Apostle Paul's dynamic, fruitful life? Listen to his testimony, "This is why we never collapse. The outward man does indeed suffer wear and tear, but everyday the inward man receives fresh strength" (2 Corinthians 4:16, Phillips). To keep spiritually fit we need the whole Bible, and we need to feed our souls from it daily.

Bible reading helps us know Jesus Christ better. We learn most about Jesus in the New Testament, particularly the Gospels, but He is actually the theme of the entire Book. After His resurrection Jesus astounded two of His disciples by beginning at Moses and all the prophets (the Old Testament) and interpreting to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself (see Luke 24:27). Look for Jesus Christ throughout the Bible.

People are groping for purpose and meaning to life. But we have undermined the very foundation for purposeful living by substituting God's truth with humanistic speculations. The result is more and more people confused, frustrated and in despair. How assuring are the words of Jesus to His Father, "Thy Word is truth!" Yes, the Book is true. And it is absolutely trustworthy. Men's theories undergo constant change, but the Bible needs no alteration. It is the most up-to-date Book there is. It is anchored in historical events and invites honest investigation. You can unreservedly place your confidence in it.

Develop the habit of regular, consecutive Bible reading and meditation and mark your growth in spiritual vitality, joy, stability and usefulness.

## The Plan

1. You will read the New Testament in one year, and you can read the Old Testament either in one or two years.
2. Check the appropriate squares when you have read the specified portions. If you follow the one-year plan you will check both outside columns for the Old Testament, but only the left column in the shaded New Testament area.
3. Don't fall behind in your reading. If you miss a day continue to read according to date and as soon as possible make up the missed passages.
4. The Old Testament books are read in the order in which they appear in the Bible. If you follow the one-year plan, you will read in two sections of the Old Testament each day, beginning with Genesis and Ezra.
5. In keeping with the object of knowing Christ, the reading of the four Gospels is spaced throughout the year.
6. You will read an average of 54 verses a day for the two-year plan and 86 verses for the one-year plan.

# **Bible Reading Quiet Time Program**

In Chapter Ten our lesson was the Quiet Time and its importance in learning how to develop our own personal relationship to the Lord. At that time we introduced you to a very simple 31-day Quiet Time program, called Appointment With God. This program guided you through a series of different ways, or patterns, you could use in addressing a passage of Scripture. Last week you completed the Appointment With God series.

In this lesson you are introduced to a Bible Reading Program which allows you to use these passages of Scripture to guide you in developing your relationship with God. These Bible Reading charts will take you through the entire Bible in one or *two years*.

If you do not have some other Quiet Time reading program you are following, let me encourage you to let the Bible Reading Program become your guide for Quiet Time passages.





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — First Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 1		Matt 1		Ezra 1
2		2		2		2:1-35
3		3		3		2:36-70
4		4,5		4		3
5		6		5:1-26		4
6		7		5:27-48		5
7		8		6:1-18		6
8		9		6:19-34		7
9		10,11		7		8
10		12		8:1-22		9
11		13,14		8:23-34		10
12		15,16		9:1-17		Neh 1,2
13		17		9:18-38		3
14		18		10:1-23		4
15		19		10:24-42		5,6
16		20		11		7:1-38
17		21		12:1-21		7:39-73
18		22,23		12:22-50		8
19		24:1-33		13:1-30		9:1-15
20		24:34-67		13:31-58		9:16-38
21		25		14		10:1-27
22		26		15:1-28		10:28-39
23		27		15:29-39		11
24		28		16		12:1-21
25		29		17		12:22-47
26		30		18:1-14		13
27		31		18:15-35		Esther 1
28		32		19		2
29		33		20		3
30		34		21:1-22		4,5
31		35		21:23-46		6,7



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Second Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Genesis 36		Matt 22:1-22		Esther 8
2		37		22:23-46		9,10
3		38		23		Job 1
4		39		24:1-28		2
5		40		24:29-51		3
6		41		25:1-13		4,5
7		42		25:14-46		6
8		43		26:1-13		7,8
9		44		26:14-35		9
10		45		26:36-56		10
11		46		26:57-75		11
12		47		27:1-14		12
13		48		27:15-26		13
14		49		27:27-44		14
15		50		27:45-66		15
16		Exodus 1		28		16
17		2		Acts 1		17
18		3		2:1-36		18
19		4		2:37-47		19
20		5		3		20
21		6		4:1-22		21
22		7		4:23-37		22
23		8		5:1-26		23
24		9		5:27-42		24
25		10,11		6		25,26
26		12		7:1-22		27
27		13		7:23-60		28
28		14		8:1-25		29



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Third Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Exodus 15		Acts 8:26-40		Job 30
2		16		9:1-19		31
3		17		9:20-43		32
4		18		10:1-33		33
5		19		10:34-48		34
6		20		11		35
7		21		12		36
8		22		13:1-12		37
9		23		13:13-25		38
10		24		13:26-52		39
11		25		14		40
12		26		15:1-11		41
13		27		15:12-41		42
14		28		16:1-10		Psalms 1-5
15		29		16:11-24		6-9
16		30		16:25-40		10-13
17		31		17:1-21		14-17
18		32		17:22-34		18
19		33		18		19-21
20		34		19:1-20		22,23
21		35		19:21-41		24,25
22		36		20:1-16		26-28
23		37		20:17-38		29,30
24		38		21:1-16		31,32
25		39		21:17-40		33
26		40		22		34
27		Lev 1,2		23		35
28		3		24		36
29		4		25		37
30		5		26		38
31		6		27:1-26		39,40



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fourth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Lev 7		Acts 27:27-44		Psalms 41-43
2		8		28		44
3		9		Mark 1		45
4		10		2		46,47
5		11,12		3:1-12		48,49
6		13		3:13-19		50,51
7		14		3:20-35		52-55
8		15		4:1-25		56,57
9		16		4:26-41		58,59
10		17,18		5:1-20		60-62
11		19		5:21-43		63-65
12		20		6:1-29		66,67
13		21		6:30-56		68
14		22		7		69
15		23		8:1-10		70,71
16		24		8:11-38		72
17		25:1-24		9:1-29		73
18		25:25-55		9:30-50		74,75
19		26		10:1-12		76,77
20		27		10:13-34		78:1-31
21		Num 1		10:35-52		78:32-72
22		2		11		79,80
23		3		12:1-17		81-83
24		4		12:18-34		84,85
25		5,6		12:35-44		86-88
26		7:1-53		13:1-13		89
27		7:54-89		13:14-37		90,91
28		8		14:1-25		92,93
29		9		14:26-52		94
30		10		14:53-72		95,96



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Fifth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Num 11		Mark 15:1-5		Psalms 97-99
2		12		15:16-47		100,101
3		13		16		102
4		14		Rom 1:1-17		103
5		15		1:18-32		104
6		16:1-24		2		105
7		16:25-50		3		106
8		17,18		4		107
9		19		5		108,109
10		20		6		110-112
11		21		7		113,114
12		22		8:1-17		115-117
13		23		8:18-39		118
14		24		9		119:1-32
15		25		10		119:33-64
16		26		11:1-6		119:65-120
17		27		11:7-36		119:121-144
18		28		12		119:145-176
19		29		13		120-124
20		30		14		125-128
21		31		15:1-6		129-133
22		32		15:7-21		134,135
23		33		15:22-33		136,137
24		34		16		138,139
25		35		1 Cor 1:1-9		140-142
26		36		1:10-31		143,144
27		Deut 1		2		145,146
28		2		3		147
29		3		4		148-150
30		4		5		Pro 1
31		5		6		2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Sixth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Deut 6		1 Cor 7		Pro 3
2		7		8		4
3		8		9		5
4		9		10		6
5		10		11		7
6		11		12		8
7		12		13		9
8		13		14		10
9		14		15:1-19		11
10		15		15:20-58		12
11		16		16		13
12		17		2 Cor 1		14
13		18		2		15
14		19,20		3		16
15		21		4		17
16		22		5		18
17		23		6		19
18		24		7		20
19		25,26		8		21
20		27		9		22
21		28		10		23
22		29		11		24
23		30		12		25
24		31		13		26
25		32		Luke 1:1-17		27
26		33,34		1:18-38		28
27		Joshua 1		1:39-80		29
28		2		2:1-21		30
29		3		2:22-52		31
30		4		3		Eccl 1



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Seventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Joshua 5		Luke 4:1-30		Eccl 2
2		6		4:31-44		3,4
3		7		5:1-26		5,6
4		8		5:27-39		7,8
5		9		6:1-23		9
6		10		6:24-38		10-12
7		11,12		6:39-49		S Sol 1-3
8		13,14		7:1-17		4,5
9		15		7:18-23		6-8
10		16-18		7:24-35		Isaiah 1
11		19		7:36-50		2,3
12		20,21		8:1-3		4-6
13		22		8:4-25		7
14		23		8:26-56		8
15		24		9:1-9		9,10
16		Judges 1		9:10-36		11,12
17		2		9:37-62		13
18		3		10:1-16		14,15
19		4		10:17-42		16,17
20		5		11:1-28		18,19
21		6		11:29-54		20,21
22		7		12:1-40		22
23		8		12:41-59		23,24
24		9		13:1-5		25-27
25		10		13:6-35		28
26		11		14:1-24		29
27		12,13		14:25-35		30,31
28		14,15		15		32
29		16		16		33
30		17,18		17:1-10		34-36
31		19		17:11-37		37



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eighth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		Judges 20		Luke 18:1-14		Isaiah 38,39
2		21		18:15-43		40
3		Ruth 1		19:1-27		41
4		2		19:28-48		42
5		3,4		20:1-18		43
6		1 Sam 1		20:19-47		44
7		2		21:1-9		45-47
8		3		21:10-38		48
9		4		22:1-38		49
10		5,6		22:39-71		50,51
11		7,8		23:1-25		52-54
12		9		23:26-56		55,56
13		10		24:1-27		57,58
14		11,12		24:28-53		59
15		13		Gal 1		60,61
16		14		2:1-10		62-64
17		15		2:11-21		65,66
18		16		3		Jer 1
19		17		4:1-11		2
20		18		4:12-31		3
21		19		5		4
22		20		6		5
23		21,22		Eph 1		6
24		23		2		7
25		24		3		8
26		25		4:1-16		9,10
27		26,27		4:17-32		11
28		28,29		5:1-20		12,13
29		30,31		5:21-33		14,15
30		2 Sam 1		6		16
31		2		Phil 1		17





**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Ninth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Sam 3		Phil 2:1-13		Jer 18,19
2		4,5		2:14-30		20,21
3		6		3		22
4		7		4		23
5		8,9		Col 1		24
6		10		2		25
7		11		3		26
8		12		4		27,28
9		13		1 Thes 1		29,30
10		14		2		31
11		15		3		32
12		16		4		33,34
13		17		5		35
14		18		2 Thes 1		36,37
15		19		2		38,39
16		20		3		40,41
17		21		1 Tim 1		42,43
18		22		2		44,45
19		23		3		46,47
20		24		4		48
21		1 Kings 1		5		49
22		2		6		50
23		3		2 Tim 1		51:1-33
24		4		2		51:34-64
25		5		3		52
26		6		4		Lam 1
27		7:1-26		Titus 1		2
28		7:27-51		2		3
29		8:1-34		3		4,5
30		8:35-66		Phm 1		Ezek 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Tenth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Kings 9	John	1:1-28		Ezek 3
2		10		1:29-51		4, 5
3		11		2		6, 7
4		12		3		8, 9
5		13		4:1-26		10
6		14		4:27-54		11
7		15		5:1-24		12
8		16		5:25-47		13
9		17		6:1-24		14, 15
10		18		6:25-34		16
11		19		6:35-71		17
12		20		7:1-9		18, 19
13		21		7:10-31		20
14		22:1-23		7:32-53		21
15		22:24-53		8:1-38		22
16		2 Kings 1		8:39-59		23
17		2		9		24
18		3		10:1-30		25
19		4		10:31-42		26, 27
20		5		11:1-37		28
21		6		11:38-57		29, 30
22		7		12:1-36		31
23		8		12:37-50		32
24		9		13:1-20		33
25		10		13:21-38		34, 35
26		11		14		36
27		12		15		37
28		13		16		38
29		14		17		39
30		15		18:1-14		40
31		16		18:15-40		41



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Eleventh Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		2 Kings 17		John 19:1-22		Ezek 42,43
2		18		19:23-42		44
3		19		20		45
4		20		21		46
5		21		Hebrews 1		47
6		22		2		48
7		23		3		Daniel 1
8		24		4,5		2:1-24
9		25		6		2:25-49
10		1 Chron 1		7:1-19		3
11		2		7:20-28		4
12		3		8		5
13		4		9		6
14		5		10		7
15		6:1-48		11:1-12		8
16		6:49-81		11:13-40		9
17		7		12		10
18		8		13		11:1-13
19		9		James 1:1-11		11:14-45
20		10,11		1:12-27		12
21		12		2		Hosea 1,2
22		13,14		3		3-5
23		15		4		6,7
24		16		5		8,9
25		17		1 Peter 1		10,11
26		18		2		12-14
27		19,20		3		Joel 1
28		21		4		2
29		22		5		3
30		23		2 Peter 1		Amos 1,2



**EQUIPPING THE SAINTS**

Month

# Bible Reading — Twelfth Month

	First Year		First/Second Year		Second Year	
	Old Testament		New Testament		Old Testament	
Day	✓		✓		✓	
1		1 Chron 24		2 Peter 2		Amos 3,4
2		25		3		5
3		26		1 John 1		6,7
4		27		2		8,9
5		28		3		Obadiah 1
6		29		4		Jonah 1,2
7		2 Chron 1,2		5		3,4
8		3,4		2 John 1		Micah 1,2
9		5,6		3 John 1		3,4
10		7,8		Jude 1		5,6
11		9		Rev 1		7
12		10		2		Nahum 1
13		11		3		2,3
14		12,13		4		Habak 1,2
15		14,15		5		3
16		16,17		6		Zeph 1
17		18		7		2,3
18		19,20		8		Haggai 1,2
19		21		9		Zech 1,2
20		22,23		10		3,4
21		24		11		5
22		25		12		6
23		26,27		13		7,8
24		28		14,15		9
25		29		16		10
26		30,31		17		11
27		32		18		12,13
28		33		19		14
29		34		20		Malachi 1
30		35		21		2
31		36				3,4



# *EQUIPPING THE SAINTS*

## **Discipling Plan**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date/Lesson

Trainer \_\_\_\_\_

Disciple \_\_\_\_\_

**Lesson Objective:**

**Activities**

**Tools**

**Review**

**Teach**

Prayer

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA

Reading

Evangelism/Discipleship

Scripture Memory

**Time**

**Plan for Activities**

**Application**

**Assignment**

Lesson

Bible Study

PSMA/Reading

Ministry

Scripture Memory